CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes,

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES, of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, *and* PORTUGAL.

——— Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

The Second Edition greatly inlarged and corrected.

VOL. II.

DUBLIN:

Printed for HENRY SAUNDERS, in High-Street, and HULTON BRADLEY, in Dame-Street.

M DCC LXI.

BRITISH MUSEUM
30 62
AUG

THE CONTENTS OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

SOME remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'*s new maſter.* CHRYSAL *attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.* P. 1

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream. 6

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſwade each other to dream that it is true. 13

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes

CONTENTS.

a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.* Pag. 20

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants, in GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.* 25

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court-favour. The biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather, for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built, inſtead of an hen-coop; and ſpoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common: A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields, in an undreſs. 29

CHAP. VII.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character. 37

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad. 45.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate clyſter-pipe-maker, who was like to be*

BRITISH MUSEUM 30 62 AUG

be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL *into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character. Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win.* P. 50

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor, and a noted ballad-ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike.* 58

CHAP. X.

A venerable Matron compleats the company. The curtain lifted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. MOMUS *plays ſucceſſively upon Doctor* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character.* 63

CHAP. XI.

The Doctor pays a viſit to an uſeful friend. The myſtery of controverſy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation, for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace. Her diſappointment, in her viſit to the Priſon. Her Grace's character.* 76

CHAP. XII.

Hiſtory of a lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a rout. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold ſtroke for an huſband.* 83

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL, *by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of the induſtry, who brings*

him to an horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences. 91

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation,* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly offer for very old reaſons. His ſtrange notion of ſome affairs.* 96

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon, for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon.* 102

CHAP. XVI.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned, romantick ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.* 109

CHAP. XVII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.* 115

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVIII.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and ſails with his ſon for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conſcience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is ſent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH. 124

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL'*s remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected for ſuch paſſions.* 129

CHAP. XX.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his deſtined maſter.* 136

CHAP. XXI.

How CHRYSAL *found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolutions to maintain the conſequence of his rank.* 143

CHAP. XXII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.* 150

CHAP. XXIII.

Compariſon between two dealers in fleſh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.* 154

BOOK

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

THE rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few ſurvivors of the firſt fury brought to publick juſtice. Pag. 159

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly reſented brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humble magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflections on the ſight of* CHRYSAL. 164

CHAP. III

The king takes a view of his camp in diſguiſe. The exalted pleaſure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle. 169

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reaſon to admire his maſter. A ſtranger throws himſelf at his feet to implore juſtice. The ſtory of the ſtranger.* 174

CHAP. V.

The king ſends for the general, and orders the ſtranger to be confined, till his arrival. Continuation of the ſtory of the ſtranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of ſoul. 180

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.* Pag. 186

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The hiſtory of his maſter's brother. His miſſion, labours, and ſucceſs in* ENGLAND. *He is ſent to* PERU. *He diſapapproves of the precipitancy of the meaſures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.* 192

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhews the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He propoſes to his brother to join in the general, that he may acompliſh his particular deſign.* 197

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhew the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.* 201

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his argu-

arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Pag. 206

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of* GERMANY. *A ſhort view of the war between the* FRENCH *and* ENGLISH, *with the motives of the former for transferring the ſeat of it, into* GERMANY. *Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment.* 210

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy ENGLISH *ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.* 219

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* BRUSSELS. *The great ſource of Jeſuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleaſure, and a lady of faſhion. Their hiſtory concluded in character.* 226

CHAP. XIV.

The confeſſor entertains CHRYSAL's *maſter with another, not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general conſequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.* 232

CHAP. XV.

Continued. His lordſhip's ſcheme to fling his rival unluckily diſappointed. A diſagreeable meeting occa-

occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport. Pag. 237

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter meets an old acquaintance, who relates the hiſtory of his life. Curious anecdotes of a great man.* 244

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his ſervices are rejected by the ſtate; and he is obliged to exert his abilities, in a lower ſphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then ſtrives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad ſtand.* 252

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and ſuffers a ſecond ſhipwreck, in ENGLAND. He that will not, when he may, *&c.*-------- *It is often better to play a poor game, than ſtand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives in* LISBON. 260

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *comes, at* LISBON, *into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt, without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is at length taken up; and he changes his ſervice.* 264

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINA-

CONTENTS.

AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* Pag. 270

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA. 277

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquiſitor viſits PHERON, *and obtains his conſent. He employs an* ENGLISH *ſailor, whom he ſets at liberty, to aſſiſt him in his deſigns.* 285

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.* 288

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* LONDON, *where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.* 297

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'*s new maſter.* CHRYSAL *attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.*

I HAVE often been apprehenſive, that the manner in which I expreſs myſelf, may lead you into ſome miſtakes of my meaning; the ſignification of words, in the language of men being ſo unſettled, that it is ſcarce poſſible to convey a determinate ſenſe, without ſuch a periphraſis, as would take up too much time in ſo complicated ſcenes, as thoſe I deſcribe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are ſigni-

fied by the ſame word, how eaſy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take a wrong one?

For inſtance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as ſafe from miſapprehenſion, from the immutability of the virtues, which conſtitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty, and yet how variouſly, how contradictorily is it applied;

On the *Royal Exchange* he is a *good* man, who is worth ten thouſand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injuſtice he has amaſſed that ſum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodneſs* aſſumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and ſupports his honour with his ſword, tho' he is guilty of the baſeſt breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in profeſſed violation of all laws, human and divine: while, in the ſtrictneſs of truth, and propriety of expreſſion, no greater abuſe of words can be conceived, than that of proſtituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modiſh way of ſpeaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only inſtance! they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's converſation. The horſe, that wins the match, goes *damn'd* faſt; as the one that loſes, goes *damn'd* ſlow. The weather in ſummer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now what ſenſe can the very *Devil* himſelf, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of ſuch contradictions. Tho' indeed theſe particular phraſes give him pleaſure, as they ſhew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very

BRITISH MUSEUM 30 62 AUG

very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But I am not at leiſure to preſcribe rules for avoiding this confuſion, one of the moſt extenſive cauſes of human error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect to what I ſay to you.

You are to obſerve then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But when I ſpeak my own ſentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do) I ſhall always deliver them with perſpicuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow, and would have my words taken in the ſenſe, uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject, I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all, but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) diſtinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and what was of more uſe, of thorough knowledge of the world: but wanting friends and intereſt, to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſollicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry conſideration of a poor ſalary, (for as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils) tho' his circumſtances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuſe it, but to place

his abilities in a more conſpicuous light, where they might take the notice of his ſuperiors.

As ſoon as he had received his ſtipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreſſed in all her beſt cloaths, and expecting him with the utmoſt impatience! 'My dear (ſaid ſhe) how could you 'ſtay abroad ſo late? I have been waiting for you 'above theſe two hours, and was juſt going without ſeeing you.' '*So late, my dear! it is ſcarcely ſix o'clock! But where are you going in ſuch haſte?*'---'To the Biſhop's! the Rector of ---- 'died of an apoplectick fit, as he was taking his 'nap after dinner this evening, and you know, my 'intimacy with the Biſhop's lady entitles me to aſk 'any thing from her.'----'*But, child, this is not 'in her power to give, and even if it was, it is too 'much for a common acquaintance to expect!*' 'This 'diffidence has been your ruin! You are always 'afraid of aſking, as if there was ruin in being 'refuſed; but that is not my caſe! *Aſk and you 'ſhall have*, is my text! Now-a-days nothing is 'got without it.'--'*Yes, child, but too frequent or 'improper aſking brings contempt.*'---'The manner, the manner of aſking is the thing! And 'you cannot think I want to be taught that now, 'after having lived ſo long among the Great? 'Often have I known a requeſt, *properly* made, 'gain a man a place, for which he was never 'dream'd of! As to the greatneſs of this living, 'never mind that! the greater it is, the greater 'will be your obligation to the perſon who gets 'it for you! What money have you got about 'you? we ſhall make a *party* perhaps. And let 'me have the five hundred pound note! I may 'have occaſion for that too, to make a *bett.*'

'*There,*

'*There, my dear, is the money I received to day! I'll ſtep up for the note: but pray, my deareſt, take care what you do! It is our all! And be ſure you are not tempted to any thing like ſimony! It is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever riſing, if it is detected.*'---'And the fool, that is detected, deſerves never to riſe! You may call a thing by what nonſenſical name you pleaſe; but if knowledge of the world were to prevent people's riſing in it, I do not know who would be uppermoſt now-a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the reſt to me. You ſhall know nothing of what I intend till it is done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine! ---Here, *Jane*, ſettle the furbelows of my ſcarf, and, *John*, call a chair to the door directly.' '*Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you! I do not deſire to know what you intend: But remember, my dear, this note is our all!*' 'Never fear! The chair is come, and I muſt loſe no time! You will divert yourſelf with your children, or books, I ſuppoſe; or go to the coffee-houſe. Perhaps I may not return till 'tis late.'---'*I wiſh you ſucceſs, my dear, and pray be cautious.*'

With theſe words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amuſements his wife mentioned I cannot ſay, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Biſhop's.

When ſhe came there, the footman anſwered that it was not his lady's *night*, and ſhe was not at home: but my miſtreſs had lived too long among the Great, to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſs, and muſt ſee her. The doors inſtantly flew open, his lady

was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhewn up without any farther difficulty.

The Biſhop's Lady was ſitting at a ſnug *party*, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deign'd a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *ſirrah*, (ſaid ſhe) that I 'was not to be at home this evening! I ſuppoſe 'I ſhall have all the mob of the town let in upon 'me.'---'Dear madam, (replied my miſtreſs) the 'man is not to blame! He told me you were 'not at home; but having ſome very earneſt bu-'ſineſs, I made bold to break through your orders; 'but I hope for your pardon, when you know the 'cauſe of my intruſion.'---'O madam, (returned 'the Lady) you know I am always glad of your 'company. I only chide the fellow for not obey-'ing my orders. Pray be ſeated, madam; as ſoon 'as the *rubber* is up, I ſhall wait upon you.'----- 'Dear madam, (added my miſtreſs) you need not 'give yourſelf that trouble; now I am with you, 'my buſineſs can wait your leiſure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bett, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſat out the whole evening, her ſucceſs at cards keeping up

up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair ſhe came about; but her patroneſs had very different fortune, having loſt every rubber; and what was ſtill worſe, ſeveral *by-betts*, which ſhe made *to bring herſelf home.*

This put her into ſuch a temper, that the moment the reſt of the company was gone, ſhe turned to my miſtreſs, who ſaw them all out,--'And now 'pray, madam, may I aſk what was the great 'buſineſs that brought you here this evening? (ſaid 'ſhe.) Unlucky buſineſs it has been for me, I 'know; for I have never held a card ſince you 'came: but I ſhall take care, that raſcal, who 'let you in, ſhall never ſerve me ſo again! He 'ſhall ſtrip and turn off, without his breakfaſt, the 'moment I am up in the morning.'---'Dear ma-'dam, (replied my miſtreſs, unabaſh'd at ſuch a 'ſalute) have patience a moment, and I hope to 'make you amends for all! Will you pleaſe to ſit 'down to one ſober party of *picquet?* You are 'always too *hard* for me, yet I'll venture all my 'winnings, and perhaps what I have to ſay, in the 'mean time, my compenſate for may intruſion.'

The lady could not imagine what ſhe meant, but the thought of ſo good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o'clock, ſhe ſat down to cards with as much keenneſs, as if ſix hours drudging at them had only whetted her deſire for play.

As ſoon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my miſtreſs ſays to her, 'Dear 'madam, that is right! Have you heard of the 'ſad accident that happened this evening?'--'Not 'I, (replied the other) pray what was it?'--'Why 'poor Doctor----was taken ſhortly after dinner, 'and died in his chair!'--'*Aye, then I ſuppoſe, he*

'*had plumb-porridge and over-eat himſelf!* and ſo 'burſt a pudding, as we ſay to children. Ha, ha, 'ha!'-----'Ha, ha, ha!-----But pray, madam, 'have you any faith in dreams? What do you 'think? I dream'd laſt night that I ſaw you at 'court, on ſome *great* occaſion, with juſt ſuch a 'diamond necklace on, as the Counteſs's, which 'you had bought with five hundred pounds, that 'you won from me on a *bett*; you laying, that 'my huſband would, and I that he would not, 'get the Doctor's living! Well, to be ſure, there 'muſt be ſomething more than ordinary in it; for, 'can you believe it? this very morning, I put a 'bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket, 'here it is; though I did not think of the poor 'man's death, till I heard it as I came by this 'evening, when my dream ran ſo ſtrongly in my 'head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon 'you, a rudeneſs I ſhould never have been guilty 'of on any other occaſion.'---'*Dear madam, you 'need make no apology to me! You know your company 'is always welcome. I am always at home to you!*'-- 'But, madam, what do you think of my dream!' '--*I do not know, I only wiſh it were to prove true! 'For five hundred pound could never come more ſea-'ſonably.*'---'Then you muſt win it; for my heart 'is ſet upon making the *bett*, and I aſſure you, I 'have ſuch a regard for you, that I do not even 'wiſh you to loſe! and that is what few gameſters 'can ſay.'--'*You are a pleaſant creature! but as 'for the* BETT, *it ſhall be upon condition, that my 'Lord is not under any engagement to the Miniſter, 'or her Grace, who got him his biſhoprick. If he is 'diſengaged, I will lay you, and you ſhall loſe, my 'girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's en-'couragement for you to hold. The bell rings! Will

'you

'*you walk down, and take a bit of ſupper? There is*
'*no body but my Lord and I; but do not take the leaſt*
'*notice of any thing about the matter, nor even ſeem*
'*to have heard of the Doctor's death, ſhould my Lord*
'*mention it; but muſter all your ſpirits, and be as*
'*entertaining as you can, for I always work him up*
'*beſt, when he goes to bed in a good humour.*'

The picquet-match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the Biſhop's Lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his Lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives, that uſher in every polite converſation, 'Pray, my 'Lord, (ſays my new miſtreſs to her huſband) 'what will you eat? Shall I help you to a bit of 'this fricaſee? I believe it is very good.'---'No, 'my dear, I thank you, (replied his Lordſhip) I 'have not the leaſt appetite! What is it, pray?'-- 'Sweet-breads and cocks-combs, (returned his 'lady) you uſed to like them, and they are very 'nice! Or will you help yourſelf to a bit of that 'fowl before you? ſomething you muſt eat.'--'*No,*
'*my dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not*
'*chuſe any thing to night; I am not very well! We*
'*all eat too much! Repletion kills half the people of*
'England! *We eat to much!*'---'You are going 'to be *hip'd*, my dear! *John*, give your maſter a 'glaſs of *Madeira!* Fill the glaſs! Eating never 'hurted any one, who waſhed down his victuals 'with a glaſs of good wine; horſe-meals, indeed, 'are enough to choak human creatures! So! do 'not you find yourſelf better now? Taſte this 'fricaſee; you cannot think how good it is!'---- '*Well you will have your way! You make me do as*
'*you pleaſe, though never ſo contrary to my inclina-*

'*tion! Do you call this a fricaſee? I thought fricaſees had ſpice put in them! This is as inſipid as chop'd hay! Lord deliver us from ſuch cooks! The badneſs of ſervants, in general, ſeems to be a judgment on the vices of the age!*'---' Well, my dear, taſte that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the cook could not ſpoil that. Pray, madam, ſhall I trouble you to help his Lordſhip to a leg and a wing, and a bit of the breaſt'---'*You give me too much! I ſhall never be able to eat all this! beſide, you know, my dear, I chuſe a bit of the rump.*'---Eat that firſt, my dear, and then you ſhall have the rump; but what has happened to make you ſo low-ſpirited this evening?'---'*O child, who can be other than low-ſpirited, when ſuch inſtances of mortality happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell but the misfortune may be his own next moment? There's Doctor------, poor man! was taken off this evening, without a minute's warning to prepare for ſuch a tremendous change, juſt after he had made an hearty dinner! Here,* John, *take away my plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever ſleep after dinner again!*'---' And, *John*, give your maſter another bumper of *Madeira*; that was what the Doctor wanted; he eat a great deal, and did not allow himſelf any drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will hurt you.'---'*Ah! but that was not the caſe of the Grace of ---------, who lies this moment in the agonies of death! his phyſicians left him two hours ago! The Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of his coming! He did not ſtint himſelf of wine; he took his bottle chearfully, good man!*' ---' Chearfully, did you ſay? I ſhould have ſaid ſottiſhly; for he has done nothing but drink for theſe many years paſt! He has ran into the oppoſite extream

' from

'from the Doctor, drinking too much, and not 'eating enough to ſupport nature. And I hope 'you do not ſay he has gone without warning at 'fourſcore; he has had time enough to prepare: 'but why ſhould theſe examples affect you par-'ticularly? You do not eat like the Doctor, nor 'drink like his Grace, and are young enough to 'be ſon to the youngeſt of them; why then ſhould 'you fear their fate? Here, *John*, give me a 'pint glaſs half full of *Madeira*, and reach me 'three or four of thoſe jellies. Now, my dear, if 'you are afraid to eat or drink, ſup this with a bit 'of bread, and I will anſwer for its agreeing with 'you.'

My late miſtreſs ſat all this time at her ſupper, without being able to join in the converſation; but as ſoon as his Lordſhip's taking the jellies made a pauſe in his Lady's tenderneſs, ſhe called for a glaſs of wine, and bowing to the Biſhop, drank to him by the title of *his Grace* very gravely.

His Lordſhip ſtared, and his Lady ſtarted, while ſhe finiſhed her glaſs without any emotion, and ſeemed quite unconſcious of having ſaid any thing unuſual or improper. This behaviour ſtill embarraſſed them more; when the Lady, unable to contain her ſurprize, 'Dear madam, (ſaid ſhe) 'what have you ſaid? Or how came you to ad-'dreſs my Lord by that title?' 'I hope, madam, '(replied the other) I have not ſaid any thing im-'proper! You really frighten me! I hope I have 'not been failing in my reſpect, or addreſſed his 'Lordſhip by any improper title?'--- 'I cannot 'ſay an improper one indeed! but one that does 'not belong to him, at leaſt as yet,' (returned the Lady.)---'Dear madam, what do you mean? 'Pray do not diſtreſs me! but you muſt divert

'yourſelf

'yourſelf ſurely! It is not poſſible that I could fail 'in my reſpect to his *Grace!*---'Ha, ha, ha! There 'it is again! Fail in your reſpect! No. You only 'raiſed your reſpect too high! You called him his '*Grace*, that's all.'--- 'And is that all? Thank 'heaven that I did! and long live his *Grace*, I ſay 'again, (ſaid ſhe dropping on her knees, and eager-'ly kiſſing his hand) long live your *Grace!* There 'is, there muſt be truth in dreams, and infidels 'alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Biſhop, who had hitherto continued to ſup up his jelly, without ſeeming to take any notice of what they were ſaying, could not forbear ſhewing ſome emotion; for he had the ſtrongeſt faith in them, and always ſanguinely defended their credit, eſpecially ſince his preſent elevation had confirmed thoſe of his grandmother; '*What dreams? pray, good madam,*' (ſaid he, addreſſing my late miſtreſs with a viſible anxiety) '*What dreams do you mean? Thoſe which* '*were thought to have reſpect to me, are underſtood* '*to be already accompliſhed.*' 'Pleaſe your Grace, '(the impulſe of the ſpirit is upon me, and I can-'not call you by any other title!) Pleaſe your 'Grace, I ſay, I dream'd laſt night, as I told your 'Lady but juſt now, that I met her at court, on 'ſome very *great* occaſion, as fine as hands could 'make her, (I told her this juſt now, before I 'knew one ſyllable of his *Grace*'s death) and that 'ſhe came up to me ſmiling, and thank'd me for 'the cauſe of her coming there, for it was I who 'had made you a great man!---Now what could 'this poſſibly mean, but what has happened here 'this moment, when by giving you this title firſt, '(and Lord knows, I did it without the leaſt de-'ſign, or even being ſenſible of it when I did it) 'I may in ſome manner be ſaid to have made you

'the

'the great man it belong'd to: let the world ſay 'what they will, I do believe there is truth in 'dreams, and I think mine is *out* now.'

She had ran on with this rant at ſuch a rate, that it was impoſſible for the Biſhop to interrupt her, even had he been ſo inclined; but that was far from being the caſe: he heard her with attention, and what ſhe ſaid made ſuch an impreſſion on him, that he ſat ſome time muſing on it, after ſhe had ſtop'd, before he had power to ſpeak a word.

As for his Lady, ſhe at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the ſcheme of the wager about the Doctor's living, and as ſuch reſolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addreſſing herſelf to the other, 'Indeed, 'madam, (ſaid ſhe) I do not know what to ſay to 'this affair! When you told me your dream juſt 'now, I made nothing of it, but this account of 'his *Grace*'s death almoſt ſtaggers me! Well, if 'this ſucceeds, and who knows what may happen? 'I ſhall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams!'

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his Lordſhip perſwade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordſhip had conſidered the matter, and addreſſing himſelf to the dreamer, 'Pray, madam, (ſaid he) what time had you this 'viſion or dream? In the night, or towards the 'morning?'

'morning?' '*In the morning, my Lord,* (replied ſhe) '*at the concluſion of my ſecond ſleep: and, indeed, it* '*made ſuch an impreſſion upon my mind, that I could* '*not go to ſleep after: for it was not in the confuſion* '*of common dreams! I ſaw every thing diſtinctly* '*and regularly, as if I was in the very place; and* '*particularly, your Lady appeared as plainly to me* '*as ſhe ſits there, Lord bleſs us! and by the ſame to-*'*ken, ſhe was dreſſed in white damaſk, ſpick and* '*ſpan new, and had the moſt beautiful diamond neck-*'*lace on, that ever my eyes beheld; and charmingly* '*ſhe look'd, I thought.*'

'I really do not know what to ſay to this mat-'ter, (replied his Lordſhip with great deliberation;) 'the viſions of the morning have ever been held 'in moſt repute; for then the mind has recovered 'from the fatigues of the preceding day, and is 'able to exert its abilities, and look forward into 'the time to come. There are ſome good cir-'cumſtances, I own, in this dream! I am glad that 'my wife was not dreſſed in colours; that would 'have been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar 'garment of ſucceſs; angels are clad in white! and 'in this caſe particularly, it may prefigure the 'epiſcopal lawn, as that is an emblematical type 'of the purity of the epiſcopal function; and the 'epiſcopal and archiepiſcopal differ only in degree. 'As for the necklace, there may be more in that 'alſo than is apprehended. Precious ſtones are the '*inſignia* of dignity, and in the *Jewiſh* prieſthood 'particularly, were ſymbolical of the higheſt 'order; for none of the prieſts wore them, but the 'ſupreme or high-prieſt, whoſe dignity anſwered 'nearly to that of *Primate* with us; and if ſuch 'farther bleſſings ſhould be in the divine will, it 'were impious and ungrateful to refuſe its favours.

'Perhaps

'Perhaps I ſpeak unintelligibly to you; but the 'opinions of the learned muſt be delivered in their 'phraſe.'---'*Pray, my Lord, proceed*; *I could hear 'your Lordſhip for over*; *I always am the wiſer and 'the better for hearing your Lordſhip.*'

'Then as to the credit to be given to dreams, '(reſumed his Lordſhip) though the ſcepticiſm of 'theſe unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of 'wiſer antiquity was of an other opinion, of which 'numberleſs inſtances might be given out of the 'holy Scriptures. And among the *Gentiles*, the 'greateſt of their poets ſays, Ονας εκ διος εϛι, that 'is, in *Engliſh*, *dreams proceed from* Jove, that is, 'from the ſupreme Deity, whom they erroneouſly 'call'd by that name. And tho' the heathens were 'guilty of great ſuperſtitions in this particular of 'dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them, 'but in the methods which they uſed to procure 'them; ſuch as offering ſacrifices, and ſleeping in 'the ſkins of the victims, and many others; 'whereas, the dream that comes from heaven, 'comes unſought and unexpected, and ſhould be 'received with reverence! And if this is ſuch, and 'I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will 'be done, O Lord! Thy ſervant ſubmits as it 'is his duty!'

Greatly as they muſt have been edified by this elaborate diſſertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, eſpecially his wife, who knew not which to admire moſt, the readineſs of the thought, or the eaſe with which it was received. But the dreamer had a farther ſcheme in her head, to carry on which ſhe now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Biſhop, 'My Lord, (ſaid ſhe) may I beg your 'Lordſhip's bleſſing! I hope, and I am confident

'in

'in that hope, that mine was not a common 'dream, from the impreſſion it made on my mind, 'which could not have been ſtronger, if I had 'actually been preſent at your Lady's kiſſing the 'King's hand on your promotion: but if my zeal 'has hurried me too far in my expreſſions of it, I 'rely on your goodneſs to forgive my fault, which 'was rather an enthuſiaſm than a deſign; and ſo, 'my Lord, I beg leave to wiſh you a good night.'

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity, went as to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That 'was an excellent thought, (ſaid ſhe) and will 'make our affair quite eaſy, if he is not engaged.' --'*I do not underſtand you, madam,* (replied the 'other) *pray what thought do you mean?*---'Why, 'child, that of the dream; what elſe ſhould I 'mean? *A thought, dear madam! Why, do not 'you think I was ſerious, and the dream real?*'--- 'Not one word of either I aſſure you; and I wonder at your aſking me that queſtion here, where 'no one is preſent to obſerve us!'---'*Dear madam, 'you have quite miſtaken me, I aſſure you. It is 'true, I can jeſt ſometimes; but in this, give me 'leave to ſay, that I was moſt ſerious; and what is 'more, that I am ſure the event will confirm it.*'--- 'You aſtoniſh me, madam; I declare I looked 'upon the whole as a meer *fineſſe*, to promote our 'ſcheme, about the Doctor's living, for your 'huſband!'---'*I am ſorry, madam, that you ſhould 'have ſuch an opinion of me, as that I could invent ſuch 'a ſtory on any account!*'---'Well, (as I ſaid before, 'though in another ſenſe) I know not what to 'make of the whole! But as you are ſo poſitive,

'and

'and my Lord ſeems inclined to believe you, perhaps there may be more in it than I can ſee; and therefore I ſhall ſuſpend my opinion, till I ſee the end of it. This though I promiſe, that my aſſiſtance ſhall not be wanting to either part of the dream.'---'*And I promiſe you that I will make good all I ſaid, particularly about the wager and the necklace; and ſo, madam, I wiſh you a good night; I ſhall do myſelf the pleaſure to call and ſee how you are in the morning.*'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Biſhop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordſhip's. 'Can this be poſſible? (ſaid ſhe to herſelf) and yet, how could ſhe have the face to ſtand it out ſo, if it was not true? But then it was but a dream! Aye, but my huſband ſays, dreams are not to be ſlighted; and he ſhould know more than I, at leaſt of thoſe things that are to be found in books. And what if it ſhould be ſo after all? and that I ſhould take place of Mrs.-------, and Mrs------, and Mrs.------, and all the reſt of the Biſhop's Ladies!---------- That would be charming! And I believe in my ſoul I ſhall; for I have always look'd upon them with a contempt that ſhew'd I ſhould be one day their ſuperior. Well, *Happy come lucky*, ſays the proverb; my endeavours ſhall not be wanting, as I promiſed Mrs.--------, whoſe five hundred pound will be a pretty earneſt of the archbiſhoprick.'

Having thus argued herſelf into a kind of belief of the dream, ſhe went in to his Lordſhip, whom ſhe found abſorbed in thought about the *viſion*: 'Well, my dear, (ſaid ſhe, ſitting down by him) what is your opinion of this ſtrange matter? I own it is above my comprehenſion! At firſt I

'imagined

'imagined she might have been only in jest, and 'have invented the whole story merely to divert 'your lowness of spirits; but when I went out 'with her into the next parlour, and put it home 'to her, she still persisted in it and confirmed the 'truth of what she said by such asseverations, that 'I could not avoid believing her.

'*But, my dear,* (replied his Lordship) *she said 'she told you her dream before she came in here, or 'had heard a word of his Grace's illness!*'---'She 'most certainly did, my Lord; and with other 'circumstances, that make the whole still more not 'surprizing! Pray what time did the Doctor die, 'my dear?'---*About half an hour after four.*'------ 'That is most wonderful! And pray, my dear, 'who is to have his living? or are you under any 'engagement about it?'---'*No, child, I am not; 'nor have I yet determined whom to give it to. But 'why do you ask these questions? What are they to 'the purpose of the dream?*'---'I shall tell you, my 'Lord. You must know then that she came here 'about four o'clock, just as I had got up from 'dinner, all in the greatest hurry; and with a 'kind of wildness, I do not know how, in her 'looks, told me her dream; but with some cir-'cumstances, that I know her bashfulness would not 'permit her to mention before you; and these 'were, that I had bought the diamond necklace, 'she thought I had on at court, with five hundred 'pound which I had won from her, on a wager 'that you would give her husband the Doctor's 'living. Now as he was not even sick at the time 'of her telling me this, there could be no design 'in it; and this is what makes me take the more 'notice of the matter.'

'*But*

'*But are you ſure, child, that ſhe told you this ſo* '*early as four o'clock?*'---' Rather before it, my 'dear; and what makes me ſo poſitive about it is, 'that a little after ſhe had finiſhed her ſtory, ſhe 'happen'd to look at her watch, but it was down, 'and ſo ſhe aſked me what a clock it was by mine, 'that ſhe might ſet by it; and I remember it want-'ed exactly ſix minutes of four.'---*Pray let me look* '*at your watch; have you not altered it ſince?*'---- 'No, my dear; but why do you aſk?'---' *Becauſe* '*it is nine minutes faſter than mine, and it was juſt* '*half an hour paſt four by his watch, as they told me,* '*when he died, and his and mine were exactly together;* '*ſo that the ſix minutes which your watch wanted of* '*four, and the nine minutes it is faſter than mine,* '*make a quarter before four, which was three quar-*'*ters before he died. This is moſt wonderful! for* '*there could be no deſign nor art in it. This is moſt* '*wonderful! But there have been many revelations* '*made in dreams, even in our own times; as for* '*inſtance, that in* DRELINCOURT; *for it could* '*be no other than a dream; and that other of the great* '*Duke of* BUCKINGHAM'*s riſe, and afterwards* '*of his death, as it is moſt judiciouſly and faithfully* '*repreſented by the Reverend Hiſtorian*, not to men-*'*tion many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear,* '*I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to* '*whom you pleaſe: though the curate is a very learned* '*and good man, and has a large family; beſide that* '*he has been recommended to me by the whole pariſh,* '*whom his long reſidence among them, for he has been* '*there above thirty years, has made love and reſpect* '*him as a father.*'---' Then let them provide for 'him, like dutiful children. What aſſurance!

' to

* *Echard.*

'to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not 'the proper judge of ſuch matters! if it was for 'no other reaſon I would not give it to him, to 'teach them their duty and diſtance another time.'

'*There may be ſomething in that; I do not like 'ſuch interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore 'you may give it to whom you pleaſe. And her huſ-'band is a man of learning and good character too, 'who will not diſcredit any perferment; but take care 'that you do not do any thing improper. As to your 'wager, there is no harm in that; but even ſo, it ſhould 'be kept a ſecret; I muſt know nothing of the matter.*' '---'I thank you, my dear Lord; I ſhall be ſure to 'obſerve your directions; and the accompliſhment 'of this part of the dream I take as an happy pre-'ſage of the reſt; but you muſt not be wanting to 'yourſelf; you had better, I think, go to her *Grace*, 'and ſee what may offer to promote our hopes.' '---*That is not a bad thought, my dear; but it grows 'late; in the morning we ſhall ſee what is to be 'done.*' Saying this, they withdrew, whither we muſt not follow them, for of the genial bed, 'with 'moſt myſterious reverence I deem.'

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace.*

I Have obſerved your ſurprize and admiration at the ready preſence of mind and confidence of my late miſtreſs, who could, in a moment, invent ſuch

ſuch a ſtory, and perſiſt in it ſo ſteadily, as not only to impoſe upon the Biſhop's eaſy credulity, but even upon his wife alſo, who was, in a manner, in the ſecret of her deſign, but could not interrupt my ſtory to ſatisfy it ſooner, by giving you her hiſtory.

She was a diſtant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occaſioned her being taken into his family, where ſhe lived ſeveral years as an humble companion to his Lady. As ſhe was handſome, his Lordſhip had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfaſhionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the ſtrongeſt hatred, for fear ſhe ſhould inform his Lady, to whom ſhe was not more agreeable, and upon the ſame account; as her obſerving temper had given her an opportunity of ſeeing much more than her Ladyſhip deſired to have her tell.

This made her ſituation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addreſſes of the Chaplain, to whom his Lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pound, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpened, into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enabled her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Biſhop and his Lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night, but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant, in favour of my late miſtreſs, from all danger of revocation.

They

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all ſides, his Lordſhip, with a look of great benevolence, aſked her for her huſband, and if he was at home; to which ſhe anſwered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordſhip, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will 'be diſagreeable, I hope (replied his Lordſhip) and 'if he is at leiſure.'---'At leiſure, my Lord! (re- 'plied ſhe in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the 'Lady had explained the matter to her) he is, he 'muſt be at leiſure! No buſineſs can interfere with 'his duty! I'll ſtep for him this moment.'--'You 'need not give yourſelf that trouble, madam, (re- 'turn'd his Lordſhip). *John*, do you go, and tell 'Mr. --- that I ſhould be glad to ſpeak with him. 'For, madam, I think I cannot do leſs than reward 'his learning, piety, and good life, with the *liv- 'ing* of the poor Doctor. It is what I have *long* 'reſolved, tho' I never mentioned it before, be- 'cauſe I would not torture him with expectations; 'and I give it to him now, thus early and *unaſked*, 'to ſpare his modeſty, and to ſave myſelf from 'the ſollicitations of others.' 'Long live, God 'bleſs your *Grace!* (ſaid ſhe, throwing herſelf at 'his feet, and embracing his knees in extaſy) for 'ſo I ſee it will be, every thing will come *out* juſt 'according to my dream! I could not forbear 'ſending to the *late* Archbiſhop's, juſt before I 'came here, and the porter (for I would not ſend a 'ſervant, for fear my known attachment to your 'Lordſhip ſhould make it taken notice of) brought

'me

'me word, *that he was at peace.*'--This compleated the Biſhop's faith, and prevented his ſending to enquire, for the ſame delicate reaſon that ſhe gave.

'I muſt wiſh you joy, madam, (ſaid the Biſhop's 'Lady) of this advance in your fortune! Though 'I am almoſt angry that my Lord did not let me 'into the ſecret. I have loſt ſome hours happineſs 'by his reſerve; for I always make the happineſs 'of my friends my own.' --- '*Dear madam, I 'thank you; on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! 'And give me leave, madam, to wiſh YOU joy of his* LORDSHIP'*s promotion, and of your juſt advance 'in rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging 'to it!*---' The necklace I ſuppoſe you mean? Ha, 'ha, ha!' --- '*I do, indeed, dear madam, and of 'every other happineſs that can attend ſo elevated a 'ſtation.*'

Her huſband now entered in the utmoſt agitation of ſpirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a ſtranger to his wife's ſcheme; (indeed he had ſuggeſted the firſt hint of the *bett* himſelf, but with an addreſs that made her think it was her own, he ſpoke ſo diſtantly; for he always preſerved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be preſent at the myſterious ceremony of the Biſhop's ſigning the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refuſing other applications, they withdrew, when my miſtreſs was paid her *bett*, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependance, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her

Grace's

Grace's levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he call'd to his Lady, to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow hers, in which I was; and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his Lordſhip entered her *Grace*'s levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happen'd to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank note for twenty pound, about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, underſtood her *Grace*, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of *mankind* moſtly from *books*, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhewed his reſpect for his patroneſs, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her *Grace* was ſurprized, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant inſolence* of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhewing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſly threw the reſt, *among which I was*, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purſe, as it was full of money.

My late maſter, pleaſed with the thought of having been inſtrumental in ſo meritorious a benevolence;

volence; diſplay'd his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himſelf; (for reſpect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty,) as did the reſt of the company, who all laugh'd in their ſleeves, to think how my maſter had ruined himſelf with her Grace, by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to obſerve their looks, and he was ſo far from being ſenſible that he had done amiſs, that when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly ſtep'd up to her, and begg'd leave to ſpeak a word or two with her, in private.

Though the aſſurance of this requeſt greatly aggravated his former offence, yet ſhe could not decently refuſe ſuch a favour to his rank, and therefore ſlightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants, in GERMANY. *He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at firſt put him into ſome confuſion, but recollecting the conſequence at ſtake, he, after much heſitation, made a ſhift to tell her, that, 'ſenſible of her *Grace*'s great humanity and com-'miſeration for the ſufferings of the diſtreſſed, of 'which ſhe had juſt given ſo noble an inſtance.'

'---Pray, my lord, no compliments, (ſaid her 'Grace, interrupting him with a look and ac-'cent not very encouraging) I am not at preſent 'at leiſure for them, and if you have no other 'buſineſs'---- 'May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (re-'plied the biſhop) your virtues are above com-'pliment! and I come to give you an oppor-'tunity of exerting them, not ſolely to praiſe 'them'----*I do not underſtand you, my Lord! and 'I am in ſome haſte!*' ---- 'I moſt humbly beg 'your *Grace*'s pardon! I ſhall not delay you 'long! To come then briefly to the purpoſe, 'I muſt inform your *Grace*, that out of the in-'come which it has pleaſed the divine Provi-'dence, through your *Grace*'s means, to give 'me, I have thought it my duty to lay by ſome 'little matter, to make a return with, to the 'divine beneficence, in charity to his diſtreſſed 'creatures. Now, as your *Grace*'s kind intereſt 'was the means through which this ability was 'conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble 'you with the diſtribution of my mite.'------- '*Me, my Lord? You aſtoniſh me! I cannot com-'prehend you!*' ----- 'I beg your *Grace*'s indul-'gence for a moment. You will forgive this 'boldneſs, when you know the motive!------- 'hem! hem!

'The ſufferings of my *Proteſtant* brethren in '*Germany*, (I ſay brethren, for men ſhould know 'no diſtinction, but religion) their ſufferings, I 'ſay, in this calamitous time of war and rapine, 'when the ambition of princes works the ruin 'of their people, has made ſuch an impreſſion 'upon my heart, that I come to offer this ſmall 'matter to your *Grace*, to be applied to their 'relief, as your better knowledge ſhall ſee moſt

'proper:

'proper: a trouble which I ſhould not have pre-
'ſumed to give your *Grace*, did not I know that
'ſuch works of charity are a pleaſure to you;
'and that the better information, which in your
'high rank you muſt neceſſarily have, will en-
'able you to apply it more effectually to their
'relief than I, in the darkneſs and ignorance of
'my humble ſtation, poſſibly can. I am almoſt
'aſhamed of the ſmallneſs of the ſum, (it is but
'two thouſand pounds) but it is all that I have
'yet been able to ſave; though I hope to give a
'better account of my ſtewardſhip another time;
'and that I ſhall be found not to have buried
'my talent, eſpecially if it ſhould pleaſe the
'Divine Providence to raiſe me to an higher ſta-
'tion, and thereby put the means more liberally
'into my power.----

'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace*'s forgiveneſs of
'this intruſion on your time. I am, your *Grace*'s
'moſt humble ſervant.'---'Stay, my Lord, (re-
'turned her Grace, with a look and accent ſoften-
'ed into the moſt engaging affability) Pray do
'not go; I ſee you ſo ſeldom, except *in the*
'*croud*, that I cannot part with you ſo ſoon. I
'thank you for the confidence you place in me;
'and ſhall apply your charity to the beſt of my
'judgment. Poor people! they greatly want re-
'lief, and if the invincible fortitude of the *Bul-*
'*garian* monarch, does not extricate them ſoon,
'they will be entirely ruined. But every thing
'is to be hoped for, from ſuch an hero!

'You are very good to conſider the diſtreſſes
'of the poor people! there are few now who
'think of any thing but themſelves; ſo their ap-
'petites are ſatisfied, they have no feeling for
'what others ſuffer. But, my Lord, is there any

'thing that I can ſerve you in? You may depend 'upon my intereſt at all times.'--- 'I am much 'beholden to your *Grace!* (replied his lordſhip, 'elevated at ſuch an offer, and now ſecure as he 'thought of his hopes) I am much beholden 'to your *Grace!* I have had too much experi-'ence of your *Grace*'s goodneſs to doubt it. No-'thing, that I know of at preſent: if any thing 'ſhould happen, I ſhall be moſt grateful to your 'Grace for your kind remembrance. We are all 'deſirous of having our power to do good en-'larg'd.'---

'*Yes, my Lord*; *all good men, like your Lord-'ſhip, are. It is a duty to deſire ſo. But, have 'you heard any thing of the archbiſhop of* ---- '*lately?*---' Not *very* lately, pleaſe your Grace.' '----*I believe that old man will never die! He was 'taken with a fit yeſterday, and it was thought he 'would expire every moment. But he has got over 'it, and is abroad to-day as well as he has been for 'many years.*' ---- 'In---d-e-e-d! *What is the 'matter, my Lord? ſomething ſeems to ail you.*'--- 'A--a--ſud-den --f-faint-neſs has--come--- o-over 'me; I--m-uſt-- beg-- y--our Grace---'s -- p-ar-'don--, I--- am y-our-- Grace--'s --m--oſt h-h-'hum--ble ſervant---;' with which words he 'made a bad ſhift to crawl out, muttering to 'himſelf--'*O my money! my money! O this curſ-'ed dream*; *my money! my money!*

Her *Grace* looked earneſtly after him for a few minutes, as if loſt in thought, and then burſting into a loud laughter, 'And is it ſo, my good 'lord! does the wind ſit that way? Then I 'can account for your charity. Ha! ha! ha!--

'But you are diſappointed this time, and, I 'fear, will the next too, if you do not *bid* bet-

'ter.

'ter. Two thouſand for five thouſand a year! 'Is that your conſcience! But it will never 'do.'---

I was now at the ſummit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curioſity tempting me to take a view of my new miſtreſs's heart, as ſhe ſat at her toilet; I found myſelf eſtabliſhed there without a rival, in the moſt abſolute authority, every paſſion being ſubſervient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other inſtance, diſputed the empire with me, being *here* my moſt abject ſlave, and encouraged for no other reaſon than ſolely to promote my intereſt; the mighty ſpirit of the immenſe maſs of gold, which my miſtreſs had accumulated, having taken entire poſſeſſion of her ſoul.

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court-favour. The Biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather, for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built, inſtead of an hen-coop; and ſpoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common: A Beau Lord beaten by a Bailiff, for walking the fields, in an undreſs.

WHILE my late maſter retired, to meditate on the expoſition of dreams, and to pleaſe himſelf, with the virtuous reflection of ſo ſignal an act of charity, her Grace ſat down to her toilet, where I ſaw art triumph over the de-

predations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this ſerious work was ſo far compleated that ſhe could attend to other buſineſs, one of her moſt favour'd domeſticks told her, that ſhe had that very morning received an offer, from a man who kept a noted beer houſe, and ſhuffle-board, for the place of tapſter, to the Lord Mayor, which ſhe was ſure her Grace's intereſt would readily obtain. 'Tapſter! (anſwer'd her 'Grace) what is the value of that place? Reach 'me the liſt of employments, with their ſalaries 'and perquiſites, out of that drawer! Let me 'ſee! Tapſter to the Lord Mayor! aye here it 'is! Well and pray what does he offer for it?--- 'A thouſand guineas, pleaſe your Grace (replied 'her woman) which I really think enough for 'it, conſidering every thing.---'Do you indeed! 'But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as 'worth five hundred pounds a year; and is that 'worth no more than a thouſand guineas! Does 'the fellow value his own life, only at two years 'purchaſe?' --- 'Five hundred pounds a year! 'How can that be? The ſalary is no more than 'ſixty! there muſt be ſome miſtake, in your re-'turn.'--- 'The ſalary! the ſalary ſignifies no-'thing; it is the perquiſites! The perquiſites are 'the thing! Do you think any place is valued 'by the ſalary? The perquiſites of this place are 'very conſiderable. Let me ſee! Why, he buys 'in all the beer and gin himſelf, for which he 'can charge what price he pleaſes; and then his 'own account is taken, for the quantity that is 'drunk. Aye indeed: there muſt be a miſtake 'in my return to be ſure; but not of the kind 'you mean. The place is rated too low; for

'with

'with ſuch opportunities, it muſt be worth twice 'the ſum; and I ſhall enquire into that matter, 'before I diſpoſe of the place. A thouſand gui- 'neas, for ſuch a place! I wonder at the fellow's 'conſcience, to make ſuch an offer!' --- 'All 'this is very true; but then there are ſome cir- 'cumſtances, that muſt be conſidered on the 'other hand too. You know the Lord Mayor's 'year is almoſt ended; and then, who knows 'whether his ſucceſſor will continue all the ſer- 'vants, or not. This one, it certainly is moſt 'likely he will not; for as he is a known enemy 'to gambling, and has publickly declared that 'he will put the laws in execution, againſt all 'ſuch practices, it can not be thought, that he 'will permit a fellow, who has kept an houſe that 'has been ſo notorious for it, and where ſo many 'men have been brought to the gallows, and their 'families to beggary, to hold a place of ſuch pro- 'fit under him; beſide, he has people of his own 'to provide for, who have ſerved his father, and 'himſelf in ſuch a manner, as to deſerve his con- 'fidence and regard, ſo that every chance (to 'ſpeak in his own way) is againſt this man, which 'is ſo well known, that no body elſe would bid 'for the thing, at all; wherefore, if I may pre- 'ſume to ſpeak my opinion, his offer ſhould be 'immediately accepted.'---'There may be ſome- 'thing, in what you ſay; but then, if it was 'ſo very precarious a place, do you think ſome 'of his cuſtomers would not inform him of it! 'they certainly muſt know it.'----'Why the 'very reaſon of my deſiring your Grace, to cloſe 'with him directly is for fear they ſhould tell 'him, as they undoubtedly would, if they ſuſ- 'pected his intention, in the leaſt; but he

'conceals it from them; for the principal motive of his quitting the buſineſs he is in, and 'ſeeking this place, is becauſe the greateſt part 'of his cuſtomers have got deeply into his debt, 'which he can never expect them to pay, while 'he continues his buſineſs, whereas he thinks 'if he can get this place, it will be a good excuſe 'for his calling in his money, and then the Lord 'Mayor's power will protect him from their re'ſentments. This is the true ſecret of the 'matter; for if it was not on this account, he 'has a much better opportunity of getting mo'ney, where he is, than in any place.'--- Well 'then, be it ſo! make the moſt you can of it; 'and I care not how ſoon the fellow is turned 'out after. What is the matter? what do you 'laugh at?--- 'I beg your Grace's pardon an 'odd thought juſt came in my head; but it does 'not ſignify.'--- 'What is it? Come; I muſt 'know it.' --- Why I am almoſt aſhamed to 'mention it; though it is but a trifle neither, 'as ſuch matters go now. Your Grace knows 'that my huſband has a place under the Lord 'Mayor! Now it juſt came into my head, that 'when his Lordſhip comes to wait upon the 'King, to be knighted, it would be no bad joke, 'if his majeſty could be prevailed on, to knight 'my huſband alſo.'--- Ha! ha! ha! And ſo Ma'dam has a mind to be a Lady. Why with all 'my heart! There is no great matter in it, to 'be ſure; And I ſee no reaſon why you ſhould 'not have that title as well as a chandler, or 'ſhoemaker's wife. Indeed, the candidates for 'knighthood have run ſo very low of late, that 'a man of honour ſhould be aſhamed to ac'cept of it. But that is no concern of mine!

I got

'I got the money, and where I can do that, I care 'not if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look 'to that. Well; ſince you have taken a fancy 'to ſtick a fool's feather, in your cap, tell your 'good man, when he kneels by his maſter, at the 'important ceremony, not to be too haſty to riſe, 'and I'll take care your ambition ſhall be ſatisfi-'ed; though I do not know what we muſt do 'then. Your *ladyſhip* will never condeſcend to 'put on my ſhoes, or take away the bed-pan; 'ſo that I believe I muſt look out for another 'ſervant.'---Your Grace is pleaſed to joke; but 'you are very well convinced, that I have no 'ambition, above your ſervice; and ſhall ever 'be proud to perform the meaneſt offices about 'you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more re-'ſpect to your Grace's honour, than to myſelf. 'While I wait upon you, (and I would not give 'up that, to be made a Counteſs) I am but your 'ſervant, let me be called by what title I will; 'but then I think it is not proper, that you 'ſhould be waited on by common ſervants, like 'any other perſon, of your *apparent* rank. As 'you are the fountain of all honour, and no-'bility, you ſhould have nobles, to attend you, 'as well as Knights, if I could have my wiſh. 'And it was this tenderneſs of your Grace's 'honour that made me ſo particularly affected, 'at what happened yeſterday.'----'Yeſterday! 'I do not underſtand you! What happened 'yeſterday?'----'Your Grace may remember 'that you were ſo kind ſome time ago as to 'obtain leave for me from the Lord of the 'Manor, to build a little poultry houſe, in a 'corner of yonder common-field. I accord-'ingly ſet the maſons at work, and liking the

'ſituation, though it was no great treſpaſs to 'enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, 'with a room or two where I could have my 'clothes waſhed, and drink a diſh of tea, with 'a friend, at any time, I might have a mind to 'be retired; but behold, after the wall of the 'yard was built, and the lodge raiſed, as high 'as the firſt ſtory, the Bailiff of the manor 'happened to come by, and ſeeing what I in-'tended, had the inſolence to fly into a paſſion, 'and ſaying it was an incroachment beyond the 'leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen 'to pull down every ſtone they had laid, though 'I myſelf, on receiving notice of it, went 'there, and told him it was by your Grace's 'order and for your own uſe, and alledged the 'expence you had been at; but it was all to no 'purpoſe, for he would not leave the place, till 'his orders were executed: nor was this all; 'he has had the aſſurance alſo, to ſend me word 'this very morning, that he would diſtrain the 'cows, that you deſired me to put to graze, in 'that field, if I do not directly pay for their paſ-'ture, according to the rate he is pleaſed to 'charge; which is more, than I have been able 'to make of the milk; though by your Grace's 'recommendation, I have had ſo good cuſtomers 'for it; ſo that inſtead of the profit I expected to 'make for you, of your Dairy, your Grace is 'like to be a loſer.'----'Inſolent unreaſonable 'fellow! Not to be content with his own ex-'travagant profits, without hindering every 'body elſe, of coming in for the leaſt advantage 'with him: but he has neither ſhame, nor 'conſcience, or elſe he would be ſatisfied with 'plundering the ponds, and ſelling the fiſh, and

'hiring

'hiring out the graſs as he does, withour put-
'ting the pariſh to the expence of fencing in the
'common, to prevent the people even from
'walking over the graſs! But I may, ſome
'time or another, find a way to be even with
'him. He ſtands but badly in his maſter's fa-
'vour, who deſpiſes ſuch avarice, and would turn
'him out of his place directly, but that un-
'luckily he has it, under his hand, for life;
'however, I ſhall watch every opportunity to
'return him the compliment, that I can aſſure
'him. Let him take ſuch liberties, with his
'equals! I'll have him to know, that he ſhall
'treat me with more reſpect.

'That is true! Has your Grace heard, how
'cavalierly he behaved lately to the young
'Lord ----? I forget his name. The great beau
'that made ſuch a noiſe, by dangling after the
'gentleman's wife.'------'I know whom you
'mean: No! I have heard nothing about him,
'what has been the matter?'---'Ha! ha! ha!
'I do not believe I ſhall be able to tell it, for
'laughing. Why, your Grace muſt know, that
'the Beau was walking, one morning, in a very
'plain dreſs, acroſs the upper part of the com-
'mon, where happening to meet a farmer's
'maid, going to drive home her cows, he en-
'tered into chat with her, and prevailed upon
'her to quit the path, and walk with him,
'into an unfrequented part of the field, where
'they ſat down, under a clump of trees, for
'the ſake of a little very innocent converſation,
'to be ſure. Well; they had not been there
'long, when one of the under-bailiffs, whom
'this inſolent fellow keeps to watch the graſs,
'ſeeing them go out of the road, followed them;

'and

'and coming upon them, in a very unſeaſonable 'minute, not only interrupted their converſa- 'tion, but alſo aſked the Lord (whoſe quality 'he never ſuſpected) in an imperious manner, 'how he dared to trample the graſs, and threa- 'tened to take him and his whore before a juſtice, 'and have them directly ſent to Bridewell. 'This inſult aggravated the offence of his 'intruſion, to ſuch an height, that the Lord in a 'rage bade the ſcoundrel inſtantly get out of his 'ſight, or he would break his head. Such 'words, from a perſon of his appearance, raiſed 'the inſolence of office ſo high, that the Bailiff, 'without any more ado, lifted his ſtaff, and 'knocked his lordſhip down, where he bela- 'boured him ſeverely, repeating the word Scoun- 'drel, between every blow, till the poor battered 'Beau was in a moſt doleful plight, tho' he had 'often told him, who he was, and roared out his 'quality, with all his might; but the enraged 'fellow either did not, or pretended that he did 'not believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much, as he 'thought he could, without danger of the gallows, 'he dragged him along to the high way, where 'fortunately a coach happened to come by, the 'owner of which knew his lordſhip, and took 'him up, ordering his ſervants to apprehend the 'Bailiff; but he was too nimble for them, and 'made his eſcape, and now finding his miſtake, 'and the danger into which he had fallen, he went 'directly to his maſter, and telling him the ſtory, 'in the moſt favourable manner for himſelf, 'prevailed upon him, to promiſe to ſtand by 'him; particularly as he alledged that the af- 'fair had proceeded from his great care of his

maſter's

'maſter's graſs, which could never be kept, if 'he ſhould be let to ſuffer for defending it.

'In the mean time, the poor Lord was in ſo 'very bad a taking, that all the phyſicians and 'ſurgeons in town were gathered about him; 'by whoſe aſſiſtance he was confined to his bed, 'for near a week. As ſoon as he was permitted to 'ſpeak and ſee his friends, he ſent directly to the 'head Bailiff, to let him know how his man had 'uſed him; but all the ſatisfaction he could ob-'tain, even when he went and applied in perſon, 'was to have the fellow removed to another part 'of the common; nor could he obtain this, till 'he declared that he would make his complaint 'directly, to the Lord of the Manor, if he had 'not ſome redreſs: It is ſaid, he talked of 'challenging him, but he is one of the grand 'jury, of the court-leet, and therefore cannot 'be called to an account that way.'

CHAP. VII.

An odd viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character.

BY this time the myſteries of the toilet were over, and my miſtreſs's face finiſhed for the day, when a perſon entered to her, whoſe appearance was far from promiſing ſuch an intimacy with a Lady of her rank.

The moſt ſhabby, ſqualid dreſs covered a diſtorted carcaſs, not much above four feet high, but

but ſo groſs, that, laid upon his back, he would have caſt a ſhadow nearly as long as when he ſtood upright. A deep olive complection, an aquiline noſe, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greaſy, curled beard, made the beauty of his face correſpond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary perſon approached her *Grace*, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon buſineſs, told her, 'that he came to know if ſhe meant to *buy in* 'that day, for the report raiſed in the *Alley*, by '*their* expreſs from abroad, had given ſuch a 'ſtroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to 'the ground; but would moſt certainly riſe again 'the next day, as ſoon as the news, which had 'arrived that morning, ſhould be known; which 'could not be kept a ſecret, as the people want-'ed ſomething to keep up their ſpirits, among 'ſo many miſcarriages, and divert them from 'making too cloſe enquiries into the conduct of 'affairs.'

'Why! my honeſt friend *Aminadab!* (replied 'her *Grace*) I muſt be directed in theſe matters 'by you. If you think there is any thing to be 'got, by *buying in* to-day, with all my heart: 'though I muſt own I cannot conceive why you 'ſhould *ſell out*, the very laſt week, to *buy in* 'this.'

'Ah! my lady (returned *Aminadab*) there is a 'myſtery in all buſineſs, and in none greater than 'ours. The *Bulgarian* King's ſucceſs laſt week 'raiſed people's ſpirits ſo high, that they thought 'the world was to be all their own, and there-'fore bought at any price. Now that was the 'time for a prudent perſon to *ſell*, as I adviſed

'your

'your *Grace*; which we had no ſooner done, 'than inſtantly comes an expreſs, (*of our own*) 'with an account that the enemy had turned 'upon him in their retreat, and entirely van-'quiſhed the vanquiſhers.

'This news quite overthrew the ſpirits raiſed 'by the former, and made every one eager to ſell 'out at any loſs, for fear the enemy ſhould *get 'wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now 'as this was but a terror raiſed by ourſelves, we 'take the advantage of it, and ſo buy in when 'others are ſelling out 20 *per cent.* cheaper than 'we ourſelves ſold out laſt week, when the 'madneſs bent the other way; and may perhaps '*ſell* again the next, when another packet ſhall 'ſet things right, and bring the people back their 'ſenſes. For the ſenſes of the people of this 'country are as inconſtant as the ſea, depending 'intirely upon the winds that blow them news.'

'*But is it really poſſible that any people can be 'ſuch fools?* O, pleaſe your *Grace*, they are 'only too rich! They have more money than 'they know what to do with; that is all.'---- '*Then, Aminadab, we will eaſe them of ſome of 'the burthen. But would it not be better to con-'ceal this news for another day; might not that 'make them fall ſtill lower?*' ---, But, my lady, 'the people want the good news.' --------'*The 'people may hang themſelves in deſpair, I care not, 'ſo I get money.*'---'The government though'--- '*What is the government to me? I will get all I 'can, and then leave them to themſelves, to ſink or 'ſwim as they will; it is all one to me.*'----'That 'is true; your *Grace* ſays right. A people who 'do not know, or at leaſt, will not follow their 'own intereſt, are not worthy any perſon's care,

longer

'longer than while he can make ſomething of 'them. But we muſt reſerve that ſtroke for an- 'other time. This news has got into the offices, 'and nothing there is a ſecret you know. Be- 'ſides the *Pannick* was too violent to laſt; it 'begins too wear off already: in another day they 'would recover their ſenſes of themſelves. I 'think, therefore, with your *Grace*'s approba- 'tion, to *buy in* all I can to-day; without you 'had rather lay out your money in the ſupplies, 'for the proteſtants of *Germany*.'---'*With all my* 'heart, *if you can make as much of it that way as* 'in the funds: but not otherwiſe. I would not 'loſe one ſhilling for any people under heaven!'

'Your *Grace* has a juſt notion of the world, 'and of the value of money that governs it. In- 'deed, I muſt ſay, that the terms for theſe ſupplies 'are very unreaſonable, conſidering how ſuch 'things have been done, for ſome time paſt. It is 'expected that people ſhould bring in their mo- 'ney, without any *premium*, or other advantage, 'than what was publickly calculated for, at the 'granting them. But theſe œconomiſts will find 'themſelves miſtaken. The world is wiſer now- 'a-days, than to give up advantages which they 'have once got poſſeſſion of. As to that affair, 'therefore, I ſhould think it better to let it ſtand 'a little longer, till the neceſſity becomes more 'urgent, and then they will be glad to come into 'our terms, if it were not that the poor people 'may be ruined in the mean time; ſo that indeed 'I am at a loſs what to adviſe your *Grace* to do, 'in ſo nice an affair.'

'*Why let them be ruined then: it is not my fault*; '*nor is it my buſineſs to ſave them*; *nor will I* '*part with a ſhilling to do it. Beſides, if they do*

ſuffer

'*ſuffer by the delay, thoſe who gave them this ſup-*
'*ply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to*
'*repair it.*'---'I cannot but admire your *Grace*'s
'judgment in all things. You are above the
'fooliſh weakneſs of nature, and have the noble
'reſolution to ſee your own family periſh, rather
'than injure your own intereſt, to relieve them.
'I ſhall obey your *Grace* in all things. I
'go now to *the Alley*, where buſineſs will ſoon
'begin.'---'*Do, honeſt Aminadab, and fear not*;
'*though I could not procure an eſtabliſhment for*
'*your whole nation, as I would have done, I cer-*
'*tainly will for your family, and that is enough for*
'*you. Your ſon ſhall be made a* BARONET *at leaſt*;
'*you have riches enough to ſupport the title.*'

'Your *Grace* is very good; our people are
'all ſatisfied of your kind intentions: but, alas,
'that was a ſevere diſappointment to us, after
'coſting us ſo much money. The children of
'the Lord weep over it in their ſynagogues, and
'the daughters of *Sion* lament it in their ſongs;
'but my houſehold ſhall rejoice in thy favour,
'and the labours of my life prove my gratitude
'for it.'

Honeſt *Aminadab* was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent, ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (ſaid he, advanc-
'ing with due reverence and ceremony) I come
'to wait upon you, about that place in the----:
'that gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give
'one ſhilling more for it.'----'*Then let the other*
'*have it*; *I will not loſe five pence, much leſs five*
'*hundred*

'*hundred pounds, for him.*'---'But, pleaſe your '*Grace*, you know what grounds he has to ex-'pect it on; beſides your promiſe, which cannot 'well be broken through, it was ſo poſitive.'--- '*My promiſe was only conditional (in my own in-'tention) that he ſhould give me as much as another, 'and in no other ſenſe will I keep it. As for his 'grounds of expectation, I regard them not: let him 'make the moſt of them, where he can.*'---'Juſt 'as your *Grace* pleaſes; I only took the liberty 'of ſpeaking my own opinion, but always in 'ſubmiſſion to your's Not but I muſt own I 'am apprehenſive of this gentleman's reſentment, 'though not immediately for myſelf, ſo much 'as for your Grace's character, with which he 'may be provoked to make too free upon ſuch 'an affair.'---'*Aye! that is liberty, your boaſted 'Engliſh liberty, to ſpeak diſreſpectfully of your 'ſuperiors. But I deſpiſe whatever he can ſay; 'nor will I give up my own way for fear of his im-'pertinence.*'---'Very right: your *Grace* is very 'right. It were by no means fit that you ſhould: 'but then it is to be conſidered, whether this 'breach of promiſe may not be attended with 'inconveniencies, that may overballance the ad-'vantage, as it may make others afraid to deal 'with you another time.'---'*I will venture that: 'none come to me but for their own advantage, and 'while they can find that, they will ſcarce ſtay away 'for punctilio's. So let me hear no more of this, 'but cloſe with the other directly.*

'Will not your *Grace* pleaſe to abate of your 'demand for that place in *Ireland?* I really fear 'you rate it too high.'---'*Not a ſhilling! I will 'not abate a ſhilling! Surely I ought to know the 'value of things in* IRELAND *by this time! I have*

'*had*

'*bad ſufficient dealing there, to teach me; it has* '*been my privy purſe for many years.*'--- 'But 'what I fear is, that if your *Grace* does not fix 'upon ſome one directly, the lord deputy may, 'and that would diſappoint you; for this place 'has ever been immmediately in his gift, and it 'would reflect a kind of diſhonour on him, to 'give it up.'---- *Diſhonour indeed! I am much* '*concerned for his honour certainly! And as for* '*his naming any one to contradict me, I believe he* '*will be cautious how he does that. The example* '*of his predeceſſor will teach him.*'------'How-'ever, if your *Grace* pleaſes, to prevent any 'diſputes, I will wait on him, and tell him that 'you have a friend, whom you deſign to recom-'mend.'---- *With all my heart; you may if you* '*will. But as to the price, I will not abate one* '*ſhilling, as I ſaid before. Do not I know that* '*places in that country are either mere penſions,* '*without any thing to do, or even neceſſity of ever* '*going there at all; or where that cannot be diſ-*'*penſed with, from the nature of the place, that* '*no learning, no abilities are requiſite. If it was* '*here indeed, where knowledge in a profeſſion is* '*abſolutely neceſſary to a place in it, there might be* '*ſomething in bigling about the price, but for a cow-*'*ard to ſcruple paying for being made a general, or* '*a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more un-*'*reaſonable; and I will not hear another word* '*about it.--- But what have you done about thoſe* '*titles, which I gave you to diſpoſe of?*--'Really 'I do not know what to ſay to your *Grace* about 'them: the bent of the people does not ſeem to 'incline to honours of late.'--- *No! I thought* '*they were always as good as ready money; eſpe-*

cially

'*cially with thoſe who have more money than ſenſe,*
'*and think it eaſier to buy, than earn honour by*
'*merit. An* IRISH *title was the conſtant refuge*
'*of thoſe ſons of fortune, who not being born in the*
'*rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it, by*
'*their villanies, were deſirous of changing their*
'*names for ſonorous titles, to hide their diſgrace,*
'*as it were, under an heap of honours, which in*
'*reality only make them the more expoſed to the*
'*view, and conſequently to the cenſure, of the*
'*world.--- But I find, even that imaginary ſenſe*
'*of honour is gone out of faſhion, and the ſhadow is*
'*in no more requeſt than the ſubſtance, at preſent.*
'*But ſince they are grown ſuch a drug, even make*
'*the moſt you can of them: ſell them to whoever*
'*will buy; I ſhall take no exceptions to perſons.*

'I ſhall certainly do the beſt I can for your '*Grace*, though they have been ſo oddly given 'away of late, that I verily believe people are 'aſhamed of taking them, for fear of being 'laughed at. Rattles are given to children, but 'titles to old men, to divert them; to ſome, in 'reward for not doing *the very worſt* poſſibly in 'their power; and to others, for doing *nothing* '*at all.*---But pray, has your *Grace* ſeen the old 'colonel yet? he got his commiſſion yeſterday; 'I wiſh he may mean your *Grace* fairly.'--'*Why?* '*ſure you do not imagine he can have the aſſurance* '*to think of playing me a trick?*'---- 'I do not 'poſitively ſay ſo: but his behaviour has been 'very myſterious.'

Juſt then, a ſervant let her *Grace* know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, deſired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought ſo, '(ſaid ſhe) ſhew him up: I thought he would 'not dare to trifle with *me!*'

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE colonel advanced to her Grace with the aſſurance of conſcious virtue ſparkling in his eye, though ſharpened by a caſt of indignation. 'I come (ſaid he) pleaſe your *Grace*, 'to return you my thanks for your favours: I 'have got my commiſſion, and had the honour, 'juſt now, to kiſs his majeſty's hand upon it; 'and as your recommendation was more ef-'fectual to procure me this reward than the 'labours of a life, which has not been undiſ-'tinguiſhed in the ſervice, I thought it my duty 'to make your *Grace* this acknowledgment, and 'to offer you any ſervice in the power of an 'honeſt heart, and no bad hand, in return. 'Colonel (replied her *Grace*) I am glad that it 'has been in my power to ſerve a man of your 'character, and I do not deſire any *ſuch* re-'turn.'---'I am much obliged to your *Grace* 'for your good opinion (returned he) which I 'hope I ſhall never forfeit. I thank God, my 'character will not diſgrace your recommenda-'tion; nor ſhall you ever have reaſon to bluſh 'at the mention of my name. I have the ho-'nour to be your *Grace*'s moſt humble ſervant.'

'But colonel (ſaid the gentleman, the agent, 'who

'who ſtood by) though her *Grace* has no occaſion for *ſuch* a return as you offer, having no 'quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature, which you ſhould not forget, 'eſpecially as you promiſed it too'---'Why 'look you, ſir, (replied the colonel) as to that 'matter, it is moſt certain that I did, ſomething 'like, promiſe ſome ſuch thing, but when I 'have told the whole affair honeſtly to her 'Grace, I am ſure ſhe will be above demanding 'it.'---'Sir (ſaid her *Grace*) I do not deſire to 'hear any thing more about it! and I muſt tell 'you that you have behaved like an old knave.'--- 'Say an old ſoldier rather, madam, (replied he, 'with ſome warmth) the other is a term I am not 'uſed to.'---'A nice diſtinction truely, and well 'worthy of a man of honour (ſaid the agent 'with a ſneer)---'Have a care, Sir, guard your 'expreſſions; my reſpect, my obligations to her 'Grace will make me bear any thing from her, 'but I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, that I have 'not the ſame ſentiments for you.'---'*What 'are you going to make a riot in my apartments!*'--- 'Not in the leaſt, madam; my reſpect for your 'Grace is a ſufficient ſecurity from that. I would 'only hint it to *that* gentleman, that he may 'not always have the protection of your *Grace*'s 'preſence; that is all, madam.'---'*You are a 'knaviſh old ruffian. But I ſhall take care that 'you do not come off ſo.*'---'As your *Grace* pleaſes 'for that. By the laws of my country I can not 'loſe my commiſſion, while I do my duty, nor 'will my gracious maſter be influenced to do me 'wrong, though, in the multiplicity of greater 'affairs, my ſervices, my hardſhips could not

'reach

'reach his eye. But as I would not bear the 'imputation of any crime, much more, ſo black 'ones, as diſhoneſty or ingratitude, you muſt 'give me leave to ſet this affair in a juſt light to 'your *Grace* now, eſpecially as I may never 'have another opportunity of doing myſelf that 'juſtice.

'Enraged almoſt to deſperation to find that 'thirty years ſervice, the merits of which were 'often written in my blood, and ſtand recorded 'in theſe ſcars, were not ſufficient to procure me 'the regular advances of my rank, without a 'merit of another nature, I reſolved to quit the 'barren paths, which I had ſo long purſued in 'vain, and try thoſe methods which I ſaw prac-'tiſed with ſucceſs by others: I therefore applied 'myſelf to your *Grace*, who ſeemed ſtruck with 'my hardſhips, and promiſed me your favour; 'referring me, for more particular information, 'to this gentleman, who would have lowered 'my ſenſe of your goodneſs, by loading it with 'terms, which were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your *Grace* mentioned them to me your-'ſelf, I ſhould moſt certainly have owned my 'inability; but coming from him, I looked upon 'them as the *fineſſe* of his own art, which it was 'not unjuſtifiable to return with a *feint* of mine; 'and therefore I gave an equivocal acquieſcence 'with his propoſal, for he dares not ſay I made 'a particular or poſitive promiſe of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am miſtaken, 'and ſorry for it, but ſtill it is not within the 'article of war, that makes an error in judgment 'criminal, becauſe it was not againſt an enemy; 'but by all the rules of war, and that is my pro-

'feſſion

'feſſion, and the only one that I have ſtudied, it 'is allowable to oppoſe art to art, and try to foil 'the devil at his own weapons. This is what I 'have done; and the ſucceſs of this ſtratagem, 'which has effected by a *Coup de Main* what I 'had been making regular advances to, ſo long 'in vain, proves the juſtneſs of my plan, and 'muſt extort your *Grace*'s approbation, when 'the paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's mercenary 'influence ſhall cool.'

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurprize.

Her *Grace* found utterance firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent: 'So then (ſaid ſhe) after all, I 'find the old ruffian has outwitted you, with a 'general promiſe, or no promiſe at all, it ſeems, 'for you did not dare to contradict him. I 'thought, ſir, that I had cautioned you before, 'againſt this very thing, and given you poſitive 'orders to take nothing but the money. But 'you ſhall pay for your neglect! you ſhall make 'good the loſs to me. As for the old ruffain, I 'will ſpeak to his general, and have him broke 'for a cheat. Talk to me of his ſervices! what 'are his ſervices to me! but I will have him 'broke; his example ſhall terrify others from 'attempting to abuſe me ſo again.'

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible (replied her 'agent, as ſoon as want of breath made her 'ſtop) for your *Grace* to have him puniſhed for 'his inſolence; but ſuch a tongue as his might 'lay matters too open, if once ſet a-going, for 'you ſee he is not to be over-awed to any thing. 'As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in it;

'for

'for it was ordered for him before I applied; 'though I made him think it was obtained by 'your intereſt, to try what I could bring him 'to. Your *Grace* may be aſſured that I would 'not have taken any promiſe, had it been other-'wiſe; and I was juſt going to tell you this, 'when his coming prevented me.'---'It may be 'ſo (returned ſhe;) but I ſhall be better ſatisfied 'of it, before I give up your making good the 'loſs.'

The agent was relieved from farther perſecution for that time, by the entrance of a *meſſenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her *Grace* had any commands for her friends there. 'None but my good wiſhes and prayers 'for their deliverance (replied ſhe, with a deep 'drawn ſigh) which are conſtantly offered up 'for them. I am ſorry I am not able to ſend 'them any relief from myſelf; but I have no-'thing in my power, no places, no opportunities 'of getting any things: theſe few pieces (taking 'about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where 'ſhe had thrown the biſhop's change of her 'note) are all, at preſent, in my poſſeſſion; give 'them to my dear mother, with my duty, and 'tell her I will ſend her the cloaths ſhe wrote 'for, as ſoon as poſſible; and aſſure the reſt of 'my friends of my conſtant attention to their 'intereſt.'

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his ſervice, for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate glyſter-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings CHRYSAL *into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character. Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win.*

I WAS, by this time, ſo ſick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number, her *Grace* gave to the *meſſenger*, as I ſaw no proſpect of pleaſure in ſuch a ſervice. He had no ſooner received her *Grace*'s commands, than he immediately went to the office for his diſpatches, where, he was ſent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who ſold glyſter-pipes about the ſtreets, but being unable to get bread in his profeſſion, had fallen upon a ſcheme, that he imagined might raiſe him to the notice of the world, in the light of a ſtate-criminal, and get him his hunger well ſatisfied, while he ſhould be an happy priſoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad conſequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correſpondence with ſome perſon abroad, of equal conſequence with himſelf, and to him communicated the *ſecret* intelligence which he daily picked

picked up at coffee-houſes, or found in the publick news-papers, which his *great* friend was to forward to ſome *great* perſon, in the ſervice of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the poſt-office, but the ſtuff contained in them was thought below regard; ſo that he began to fear that his ſcheme would turn to no account. But now ſome miſcarriages in public affairs alarming the reſentment of the people, and making it evident, that the ſecrets of the nation were betrayed, this inſignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into cuſtody.

Though this was the thing which he had always propoſed by his undertaking; to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the ſtrongeſt terrors, and put on every appearance of conſcious guilt, ſo far, that he had like to have over-acted his part, and fallen a ſacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a juſt Judgment on the baſe depravity of ſoul, that could deſcend to ſo iniquitous a ſcheme, as to trifle with his ſacred duty to his country, to ſupport an anxious, burdenſome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances, which were before ſo very ſtrong againſt him, but alſo made it probable that he was guilty of more, than he was at firſt even ſuſpected of: this juſtified the proſecuting him with the utmoſt ſeverity, and ſacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for ſome victim, to atone for their reproachful loſſes.

The criminal ſoon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had ſaid; but this

was not admitted him; his own confeſſions had confirmed the charge againſt him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of ſuch ſtrong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved againſt him, but what he ſhewed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his ſtation and behaviour proved his ſafety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had ſerved the turn, and amuſed the people for his day.

I did not then ſtay in *England*, to ſee the event of this affair, but having learned it, ſince my return, I thought it better to conclude the ſtory in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it, at another time.

It would be doing injuſtice to my maſter, to imagine that he had profited ſo little, by his frequent intercourſe with perſons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it neceſſary to apply the money, ſhe had given him, to any other uſe, than his own: accordingly, when he was ſetting out, he gave me to his wife, for the ſupport of his family, in his abſence.

But this ſpirited lady had a politer way of thinking, than to obey his directions, or deny herſelf, any of the genteel pleaſures of life, for the ſake of ſuch a mean, domeſtick duty, as the care of a family. As ſoon therefore, as his back was turned, ſhe put on her hat, and cardinal, and poſted away, to one of her moſt intimate acquaintances, a lady, who kept a chandler's ſhop, in the neighbourhood, to adviſe with her, about

ſettling

ſettling a party, at her houſe, for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they ſat in, being open to the ſhop, ſo that they were liable to be over-heard, by every one, who ſhould come in, and there, over a comfortable glaſs of *right Holland*'s, fixed upon the company, and ſettled the ceremonial, and fare of the entertainment. This great buſineſs being diſpatched, my miſtreſs returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her houſe, at the expence of the ſtate, to write cards for her, ſent them by her huſband's aſſiſtant to the company, to invite them to play a game of cards, and ſpend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order, for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation ſhe made, raiſed my curioſity not a little, to ſee the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked, by ſuch a ſet; but I was diſappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper, next morning, for wine, and brandy, for the occaſion.

My new maſter was a ſtriking inſtance of the inconſiſtency of life, and the hypocriſy of the human heart: he had for many years kept one of the moſt notorious brothel-taverns, in the town; but not content with this publick inſult to the laws, in defiance of every ſenſe of ſhame, he at the ſame time profeſſed himſelf a reformer of religion; and while the groſſeſt ſcenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly, in his houſe, was chaunting hymns, in a conventicle, and groaning in ſpirit, for the wickedneſs of the

times, with a face as meagre, and mortified, as the picture of famine. I ſee you wonder at ſuch a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which, ſhews inſtances as groſs as this; the gaming devotee, the penſioned patriot, and the drunken prieſt, being equally offenſive to common ſenſe and reaſon. As for my maſter, he had as powerful motives for his conduct, as the greateſt of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pandar, to ſuch an houſe, as he now kept, when the demure ſanctity of his looks ſcreened him ſo effectually from ſuſpicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families and accompliſh ſeductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By theſe means, he ſoon acquired a ſum of money, ſufficient to ſet up this houſe for himſelf; when his character immediately brought him into buſineſs that in a little time made his fortune; but for this ſucceſs, he was chiefly indebted to a maſter-ſtroke of ſuperior genius; for having obſerved in the myſtery of his profeſſion, that there is no private ſinner, like a publick ſaint, as ſoon as he thus roſe above the drudgery of buſineſs, and from porter became maſter of a tavern, he aſſociated himſelf, with a ſet of reformers, who went preaching up and down the town, at whoſe meetings, he had an opportunity of finding out new faces, for his beſt cuſtomers, and making acquaintances with the leaders, who obſerving his diſcretion, ſoon admitted him into their myſtery, and made his houſe the ſcene of their ſecret meetings, to ſettle their buſineſs, laugh at the follies they lived by, and practice the vices, which they preached againſt. Such ſucceſs migh be thought to have ſatisfied his

avarice,

avarice, but the habit has taken ſuch hold of him that he cannot deſiſt, and he now does, from inclination, what was at firſt the effect of neceſſity.

I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long, upon his character, but that it ſerves to explain the ways of the world, and prove the folly of an opinion, generally received among men, that they can change their courſe of life, whenever they pleaſe; and as ſoon as their end is anſwered, and they have heaped up a fortune, by the iniquity of a profeſſion, quit it at once, and live virtuouſly, upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion, the high-prieſt of the conventicle, called upon him, to ſpend an hour in ſpiritual converſation. After examining into his progreſs in grace, and the encreaſe of his faith, and aſſurance of election (for ſuch is the power of cuſtom, and the pleaſure of cheating the world, that they practiſe the art, even upon each other) he told him that he had a moſt particular occaſion, for his moſt private room this evening, 'For (ſaid he, ſhaking him 'by the hand) my friend, as I have found by 'experience, that the only way to foil the Devil, 'is at his own weapons, I have appointed *Momus* 'the ballad-ſinger, whoſe attack upon me, has 'made ſuch a noiſe, to meet me here this evening, 'and make up the affair, over a glaſs of wine.'--- 'In truth (anſwered my maſter, a good deal ſurprized) your reverence's meekneſs, and patience, muſt needs be very great; or you could 'not bear ever to mention him, in any degree 'of chriſtian charity, and benevolence, after ſo 'outrageous and groſs an attack, as he has made 'upon you, without the leaſt perſonal provoca-

'tion; for what was it to him, what you ſaid 'or did to the reſt of the world, his morals or 'religion were in no danger! But you were 'born to be an example to the age, and a ſhin-'ing light, to guide the ſteps of the faithful.'

'A truce with this canting now, my friend, '(replied the Doctor) and let us talk a few 'words, like men of the world. Your proved 'fidelity and prudence making me not ſcruple to 'reveal the whole myſtery of the miniſtry to you, 'I will let you into the ſecret of this affair. 'You muſt know then, that I have, for ſome 'time, perceived the humour of the people 'begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of 'their devotion, to cool, in ſpight of all I could do, 'to keep it up, by preaching, faſting, prayer, and 'lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and 'the wonderful effects of my ſpiritual labours; 'it was neceſſary, therefore, to have recourſe 'to ſome new expedient, to prevent their falling 'off, entirely, and accordingly I pitched upon 'this, which has exceeded my expectations; for 'inſtead of making my people aſhamed of com-'ing to me, it has piqued their pride, and now 'they reſolve to ſhew, that they ſcorn as much 'to be laughed, as preached, out of their own 'way. This, my friend, is the way of the world, 'which, ſince we cannot in reality mend, we 'muſt only ſtrive to make the beſt of. If I could 'carry on my buſineſs, without this aſſiſtance, I 'moſt certainly would never have entered into 'ſuch a confederacy, any more than you would 'keep a brothel, and entertain whores, and 'rogues, if you could make equal profit, by any 'other company.'

'I am

'I am much obliged to your reverence (re-
'turned my maſter) for putting me, in any de-
'gree of compariſon, with yourſelf; but it is
'too great an honour! I act in a low ſphere;
'but ſtill I have the pleaſure to think, that even
'in my poor way, I contribute ſomething to-
'wards your great work; as there could not be
'ſo many converts to reſort to you, for ſpiritual
'comfort, if there were no places of this kind,
'to encourage vice and debauchery. You ſee,
'Sir, that I enter into the ſpirit of your deſign,
'and deſerve your confidence, by this return
'of mine. There are ſecrets in all profeſſions,
'and as you have entered into a league with
'your profeſſed enemy, that you may be able to
'play into each other's hands, ſo I, notwith-
'ſtanding the probity of my profeſſions, have a
'private underſtanding, with all the Ladies of
'pleaſure who reſort this houſe, who in return
'for their being brought into good company,
'never fail to enhance expence and counte-
'nance every impoſition, of falſe meaſures, falſe
'charges, and a thouſand others, by which
'a prudent man turns the folly of the world, to
'his own advantage. As to this confederacy
'between you, and the ballad-ſinger, I own
'I never ſuſpected the leaſt of it; and indeed
'I ſtill am at a loſs, to think how you could
'bear the perſonal reflections eſpecially, which
'he has thrown upon you. What was the miſ-
'fortune of your form to him, that he ſhould
'call you Doctor *Hunch-back?*'---'Why that
'is true enough (anſwered the Doctor) in that
'he exceeded my directions; and to call him
'to an account for it, is part of the buſineſs of
'this appointment. Every thing elſe was ſettled

'between us. We have hitherto met at our 'friend Mrs. *Brimſtone*'s, who firſt negotiated the 'affair between us, and conſented to take her 'ſhare of the ridicule, to advance the common 'cauſe. She will be here to-night too, ſo that 'we ſhall have an agreeable ſet. I believe I 'hear him juſt come in. I directed him to en-'quire for number one; do you ſhew him into 'the private room, and when the coaſt is clear, 'I'll join you.'

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor, and a noted ballad-ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

THE perſon, my maſter was ſent to meet, had ſomething ſo uncommon in his appearance, as inſtantly ſtruck my attention. Every paſſion of the human heart was printed in his face ſo ſtrongly, that he could at pleaſure diſplay it in all it's force, while his every look and geſture turned ſome vice, or folly, into ridicule. 'You enquire 'for number one, Sir!' (ſaid my maſter bowing with the profoundeſt reſpect:) 'I do, Sir,' (anſwered the other, returning his bow, aſſuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a manner that would have extorted laughter from deſpair) 'enquire for number one.'

Though my maſter was no ſtranger to his talents, which he had often ſeen him diſplay at the expence of others, this perſonal application of

of them to himſelf, threw him into ſuch confuſion, that in ſpight of his long-practiſed aſſurance, a bluſh broke feebly through his unimpaſſioned, lifeleſs face, and he had ſcarce power to ſhew him into the room. The ballad-ſinger ſeeing that he had him at command, would not purſue his advantage any farther, at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, 'I am come, my friend 'and brother in the Lord (ſaid he) to enquire into 'thy ſpiritual eſtate, to give thee ghoſtly advice, 'and commune with thee, for a ſhort ſpace, 'for our mutual edification.' ----- The ſurprize and manner of this addreſs, had ſuch an effect upon my maſter, that he could not refrain burſting into laughter; and immediately recovered from the confuſion, into which the ridicule of himſelf had thrown him.

They were ſcarce ſeated, when the Doctor entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſtranger, 'I am glad to ſee you, Sir, (ſaid he, taking him 'by the hand) and heartily congratulate you, on 'your ſucceſs! you ſee I was not miſtaken in 'my judgment! I knew what would take with 'the taſte of the public! There is nothing pleaſes 'them ſo much, as a little profaneneſs, and 'ridicule, of Religion! a fling at the Clergy 'never fails to raiſe a laugh.'--- 'I acknowledge 'your judgment, Sir,' (anſwered the other, raiſing up his ſhoulders, rolling his eyes, and echoing every cadence of the Doctor's voice) 'and thank 'you, for your congratulation; but I muſt beg 'leave to differ in opinion with you, as to the 'cauſe of my ſucceſs, for I have never had the 'leaſt fling at the Clergy, nor been guilty of

'profaneneſs,

'profaneneſs, or ridiculing religion, in my ballad; the abuſe of religion, by hypocriſy, and 'making the profeſſion of virtue a ſanction 'for the practice of vice, were the objects of my 'ſatyr, and the reception it has met with from 'the publick, ſhews that the people have a pro-'per ſenſe of ſuch vices.'

The Doctor was ſo ſtruck at the reflection of himſelf, when the other began to ſpeak, that he ſtarted, in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and was unable to interrupt him, till he had finiſhed his diſcourſe, which elſe he certainly would have done, while my maſter ſtood almoſt convulſed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-ſinger turning ſhort upon him, and inſtantaneouſly aſſuming his cadaverous appearance and bowing in the ſame manner, 'and 'you, Sir,' (continued he, addreſſing himſelf to him) 'muſt have had ample experience, in the 'courſe of your buſineſs, that the taſte of the 'town inclines quite another way, the moſt 'profligate in practice being the moſt pious in 'profeſſion.'

This ſudden tranſition from the Doctor, reſtored him to his ſpirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing moſt immoderately at the ſilly look of my maſter, though he was not quite ſo much abaſhed as he had been before.

As ſoon as the Doctor could ſpeak, 'However I may doubt your opinion,' (ſaid he to the Ballad-ſinger) 'I acknowledge the irreſiſt-'ible force of your powers of ridicule, and beg 'a ceſſation of them, for a moment, till we 'talk of our buſineſs. I will not diſpute about 'the cauſe of your ſucceſs, but I think you need

'not

'not have fallen upon my perſon. My profeſſions 'and practice ſurely were enough, with your 'own exaggerations! Why then need you give 'me the opprobrious nick name, of *Hunch-back*, 'which has ſpread ſo, that I ſhall never get rid 'of it? The very children haunt me with it, as 'I go along the ſtreets.'

'Good Heavens (anſwered the other) how 'ſubject are the wiſeſt men to the weakneſs of 'vanity! I ſhould have thought that you were 'long-ſince proof, to any thing the world could 'ſay of you, or you would have given up your 'trade before now. As to my calling you this 'name, you muſt know, that the whole ſucceſs 'of our ſcheme depended upon it; for if I had 'not turned the ridicule againſt your perſon, 'the taſte of the public is ſo groſs, that I might 'have laughed alone, at your opinions. But 'what ſucceſs have you had? Do you find your 'flock gather upon this attack on their ſhep-'herd?'---'Why pretty well (replied the Doc-'tor) pretty well. They ſeem to ſhew a proper 'ſenſe of it. As for me, I appear affected at it, 'in a very extraordinary manner, that is ſolely 'upon your account; and to convince them and 'all the world of the ſtrength of my charity, I 'deſign to-morrow to offer up prayers, for your 'converſion, as being in a dangerous ſtate of 'ſalvation, and then, on the merit of that, to 'propoſe a ſubſcription, for the relief of two or 'three families, whom your example has led into 'ruin.'---'Bravo, Doctor! (interrupted the 'other) tell me of profaneneſs again! But I hope 'I am to have a ſhare in the ſubſcription, as it is 'to be propoſed, on my account; at leaſt, you 'will let me aſſiſt in the diſtribution of it.'----

'Take

'Take care my friend! (returned the Doctor) 'another word of that kind, and I declare off 'the connection. I will have no body pry into 'my conduct, or interfere with my buſineſs! 'I did not aſk any part of your gains, though 'you got ſo much in every company, where you 'ſung your ballad; nor did I ſpeak a word in 'behalf of the other poor ballad-ſingers, you 'picked up about the ſtreets, and ſet to ſing for 'you, though the wretches complained, that 'you ſtarved them.'

The ballad-ſinger perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to waive it, as he did not chuſe to break off ſo advantageous a connection. 'As to that (ſaid 'he) I did but jeſt! I never interfere with any 'man's matters! But that's true! I have bad 'news to tell you! *The clerk of the pariſh* ſent 'me word yeſterday, that underſtanding I ſung 'my ballad to a pſalm-tune, he let me know, 'that I muſt change my note directly, or he 'would order the beadles to whip me out of the 'pariſh, if I ever preſumed to ſing there again; 'and to mend the matter, at the ſame time 'ordered me to make uſe of an old, black-guard 'tune, which he ſent me, the vulgar ſtupidity 'of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which 'was never turned againſt the tune itſelf but 'ſolely againſt the proſtitution of it; which can 'never be ſo effectually attacked, as by repeat-'ing the manner, exactly, in which it is ſung. 'But where is our friend *Brimſtone?* I expected 'to have met her here.'

Juſt as he ſaid this, my maſter was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, ſupported by

by two chairmen, who enquiring in a feeble voice, for number *one*, he directly ſhewed her in, to the company.

CHAP. X.

A venerable Matron compleats the company. The curtain lifted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. MOMUS *plays ſucceſſively upon Doctor* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character.*

THE Matron, whom my maſter was handing in to his friends, diſplayed one of thoſe figures, which loſe by the moſt forcible deſcription. Her face, though broken by debauchery and diſeaſe, preſerved the remains of a moſt pleaſing ſweetneſs and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almoſt out of every reſemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almoſt concealed a piece of greaſy flannel. Her gown, of the richeſt ſilk, flowed looſely round her, under a velvet cloak, lined with ermin; while her legs and feet, ſwoln out of all ſhape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannels.

My maſter received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and ſtooping under as much as he was able to bear, of the burthen of her body, aſſiſted her to limp, into the room. The contraſt between her and the ſhabby ſkeleton of her ſupporter was ſo ſtrikingly ridiculous, that the

the moment they appeared, *Momus* burſt into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much leſs affected, though practice had given him ſuch a maſtery over the muſcles of his face, that they never betrayed the paſſions of his heart;) 'Behold (ſaid he) the bleſſed 'fruit of thy miniſtry, and rejoice! See how the 'ſpirit aſſiſteth the fleſh, to ſtruggle with the in-'firmities of nature.'--And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother,' (addreſſing himſelf to her) 'give me your other arm; reſt 'a little part of your weight, an hundred, or two, 'upon me! Come! Let me help you into that 'great chair!'--'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones!' (exclaimed ſhe) 'how you pull me along: you 'will tear me to pieces! Oh! oh!'--'Ne-'ver fear, mother! Never fear that!' (anſwer-'ed he) 'Crazy as your carcaſs is, it will 'ſtick a little longer together! your friends 'are not ready for you yet.'---'Go! go! you're 'a wicked creature, a profane wretch.'------ 'Dear Doctor! I thought I ſhould never ſee you 'more! I had a ſad night of it; a moſt ſad 'one indeed. But the ſpirit comforted me. Oh, 'if it were not for the comforts of the ſpirit, 'there would be no bearing the pains of this 'life! I was purely when you left me! Your 'pious converſation had comforted my heart; 'and the ſober bottle we cracked together, raiſed 'my ſpirits ſo, that I forgot all my pains. But 'I was not to be ſo happy long! Satan envied 'me, and threw temptation in my way!---- 'This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his 'roaring companions came in, upon me, juſt 'as you went out, at the back-door! Well!

'to

'to be ſure they have a great deal to anſwer for!
'I was juſt beginning to read the pious exhor-
'tation, you left me; when in they came,
'ſnatched the book out of my hand, and calling
'for the Ladies, inſiſted on my ſitting with
'them; ſo, as you know I always loved inno-
'cent mirth, I could not refuſe: but alas! I
'paid dearly for it, this morning! My poor
'bones! and then my head! my poor head is
'quite gone, quite gone! I can bear no-
'thing!-----Oh what a difference there is be-
'tween ſpending an evening, in edifying conver-
'ſation over a ſober bottle, with a pious friend
'or two, and theſe ranting riotous ſcenes! though
'they behaved ſo like gentlemen, and were ſo
'good company, that there was no leaving them!
'But it is all folly! all vanity! I am reſolved I
'will leave it off! I will not follow it much longer,
'I am reſolved! I'll wean myſelf, from this
'world, and think of nothing but a new life!---
'I hope the baronet won't uſe poor *Betſey* ill!
'I did not like his refuſing to taſte the ratifia!
'I ſhould be ruined if any thing ailed her! ſhe
'is more enquired for, than all the Ladies in the
'houſe.---And my Lord! He is ſweet company.
'But it is a pity he is ſo wicked! He was going
'to burn my book of devout exerciſes; and then,
'that profane ſong of your's! what need he
'ſing that! I wonder what pleaſure people can
'find in profaneneſs! Where there is any en-
'joyment, it is another thing; but this is being
'wicked, for wickedneſs ſake. It is a great pity,
'for he is a very generous, fine gentleman! He
'gave *Poll*, ten guineas, this morning! He's very
'fond of *Poll*; he always has her, when *Betſey*

'is

'is engaged! Oh! oh! ſhall I ever git rid of theſe 'pains! when ſhall I be happy, in Heaven?'---

While ſhe was running on thus, the Doctor was buſied in writing a letter, to himſelf, as from a family in diſtreſs, for whom he intended to ſollicit a ſubſcription, the next day, from his congregation; and my maſter was laying glaſſes on the table, and drawing the corks out of ſeveral bottles, ſo that *Momus* alone attended to her, by the ſignificant archneſs of whoſe look, it was eaſy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would not have interrupted her, had ſhe continued her diſcourſe, never ſo long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a ſtop to her, and introduced a general converſation.

'I am ſorry, my friend, (ſaid he, addreſſing 'himſelf to her) to hear you complain ſo! I left 'you, in a bleſſed temperature of mind and body 'laſt night, but I much fear, that the intempe-'rance you mentioned muſt have equally diſturb-'ed both. The moſt pious man knoweth not 'what folly he uttereth, when he is full of wine! 'A little is good, and rejoiceth the heart, but 'too much marreth the underſtanding, and let-'teth looſe the ſecrets of the wiſe.'---'As for 'that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since 'the bleſſed hour of my *call*, I have never diſcloſ-'ed one ſecret, about the matter; I never men-'tion a word of it.--- But, Doctor, what did 'you do with the young Lady, whom you would 'ſee home, laſt night? I would not refuſe you, 'to be ſure; but I hope you have not put any 'more idle notions in her head! She is very 'young, and likely to do a great deal of buſi-'neſs, therefore her *call* need not come, this

'great

'great while! It will be time enough ſome years 'hence! I had a great deal of trouble to bring 'her to; and now if you have ſpoiled her, I 'ſhall have all the work to do over again. No 'body knows the trouble and expence I am at, 'for the ſervice of the public! No body knows! 'If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced 'to take up with common ſervant maids, and 'ſuch low-lived creatures; but I provide gentle-'women for them; Ladies of birth and educa-'tion! and yet I am not regarded! no body 'thanks me! This is poor encouragement, to 'ſerve the publick, very poor indeed! But vir-'tue is it's own reward! That's my comfort. 'I do the beſt I can; and if I do not receive a 'proper return, that is not my fault! Let the 'world anſwer for it! I do my part; and ſo my 'mind is at eaſe.'

'That you do! (ſaid *Momus*, while ſhe ſtopped 'to drink) that you do! Your diligence never 'ſlackens! Come fill your glaſs. Here's to the 'reformation of manners, a work that we all 'labour in alike.'—'By your leave, good Sir, '(interrupted the Doctor, with a look and tone 'of offended importance) not all alike I preſume! 'I believe you will allow, that there is ſome dif-'ference between your profeſſion and mine, at 'leaſt.'—'So then (anſwered *Momus*) you are 'returning to the old point! I thought I had ſaid 'enough to you, on that head before! Dif-'ference! aye! that there is indeed; but per-'haps you are not ſenſible, in whoſe favour, that 'difference is! I ſing a ſong, that makes peo-'ple laugh, and put vice and folly out of coun-'tenance, by ſhewing them, in a ridiculous 'light, and this only for a trifling pittance of

'that

'that money which they devote to meer pleaſure;
'but you, by drawing horrors that never exiſted
'out of your own imagination, and preaching
'up doctrines, impoſſible to practiſe, frighten
'your poor deluded followers, out of every en-
'joyment of their lives, and pillage them of the
'money, that ſhould ſupport their families and
'pay their debts, under a pretence of imaginary
'charities! This is the difference between us.'
'---Good lack! good lack! (interrupted the
'ſage matron) how can people be ſuch fools, as
'to fall out thus about nothing! What ſignifies
'it, where the difference lies, ſo you can both
'do your buſineſs? It is juſt the ſame thing, as
'if my landlord here, and I, ſhould enter into a
'diſpute, about the reputation of our houſes.
'I thought I had made you both promiſe never
'to mention this matter, any more! Come, Doc-
'tor! here is proſperity to all our buſineſs, with-
'out any ſuch fooliſh diſtinctions.' ------

The judgement of this mediation was too plain, to admit of any diſpute. The competitors filled their glaſſes, and ſhaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toaſt. 'Well now there
'is ſome pleaſure in this (continued ſhe;) things
'are like to go on well, when all parties agree;
'but when ſome people fall out------ you know
'the reſt of the ſaying -------But, my friend
'*Momus*, I have news for you! That ſtory of
'the young Lady, that you put in your ballad,
'has anſwered juſt as I ſaid. The world thought
'it would blow me up; but I knew better! I
'never had a greater run of company in my
'life, than to enquire into that affair; and they
'all of the right ſort, your ſecret, grave, old,
'rich culls, juſt fit to do buſineſs with. At firſt

'I always

'I always deny it with the ſtrongeſt oaths, and 'imprecations, and rail at you for inventing ſuch 'a ſcandalous ſtory; but afterwards, as if I am 'put off my guard, by the liquor, I ſeem to 'place a confidence in their profeſſions of ſecrecy 'and friendſhip, and with many tears, own the 'whole; that is ſo far as to my having the 'Lady, in my power; and then the conſequence 'is that they all intreat me to let them ſee her '(that is, ſingly, for ſuch chaps always come 'alone;) when, ſuch is the pleaſure in debauch-'ing virtue, that beſide making me an handſome 'preſent, for my kindneſs, they leave no temp-'tation untried, to prevail upon the Lady, 'whom they generally take to themſelves upon 'a genteel ſettlement; by which means, I have 'got a pretty ſum, and have beſides had an oppor-'tunity of providing, for near a dozen of my wo-'men, who were too well known, upon the town, 'to do any thing, in the publick way; for this 'kind of cuſtomers have too great a regard for 'their characters, ever to mix in company, that 'might undeceive them! So you ſee, Doctor, 'that I do not forget your inſtructions of doing 'all the good in my power; and ſure it is no 'ſmall matter to reſcue ſo many poor women, 'who were no longer capable of getting a gen-'teel livelihood for themſelves, from want and 'miſery, and getting them a comfortable ſet-'tlement for life, ſo that they have nothing to 'do now, but attend to you, and make their 'peace with Heaven. ------ Come! here's my 'ſervice to you, my friend *Momus*; and if you 'can think of any other ſtory, of me, that can 'ſerve your turn, and get off another ballad, 'never ſpare me! I'll forgive you.'---'And ſo

'will

'will I too (added the Doctor) though he ſhould 'call me a worſe name, than *Hunch-back!* Let 'them laugh who win. While our railing at 'each other in public, anſwers our own ends, 'we were fools to drop it, as to the deceit in 'it, it is a virtue; for ſure it is better to live 'thus in friendſhip and charity, with all man-'kind, than to be the real enemies we ſeem; and 'ſo, Sir, here's my hearty ſervice to you. And 'let us purſue our works, in concert without 'any more of theſe broils. So let us drink 'about, for an hour or two; for I muſt leave 'you early, being obliged to write an exhor.tion 'for the old dutcheſs, which I muſt carry her 'early in the morning, when ſhe deſigns to viſit 'her couſin the colonel, who is under ſentence 'of death in New-gate, for murder; not that I 'think either that, or her preaching, will have 'any effect upon him; but ſhe will try; and I 'do not care to diſoblige her, as ſhe is not only 'a good ſubſcriber upon all occaſions, but alſo a 'credit to our conventicle, which would never 'have riſen into ſuch eſteem, with the people, if 'ſome perſons of quality had not brought it into 'faſhion.'----'Why aye! to be ſure there is 'a great deal in that (added the Matron;) faſhion 'is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, I 'could never do the buſineſs I do. But ſince the 'nobility have made it the faſhion to marry their 'miſtreſſes, there is no great difficulty in bring-'ing a private gentleman's daughter, into our 'way of life, as it gives her the only chance ſhe 'can poſſibly have, of making her fortune and 'becoming a Lady; for as to the example of 'thoſe few, who married Ladies of virtue, for 'meer love, it was too old faſhioned, and

'romantic,

'romantic, to have any influence. But that's true, Doctor, I forgot to mention ſomething to you laſt night, that has given me great concern! How could you be ſo indiſcreet, as to accompany that highwayman, to Tyburne, the other day? And then to take his hand, and kiſs it, before all the people! Fie! it turns my ſtomach to think of it! I do not know how you can expect any lady will ever let you kiſs her lips after ſuch a filthy action. Beſides, it is a ſcandal to all your congregation, that you ſhould appear ſo familiar, with ſuch low-lived creatures, and ſeems a kind of an encouragement to their crimes. If you had heard what remarks two or three Ladies, who called at my houſe, yeſterday evening, made upon it, I am ſure you would never do it again.'---- 'Go to, woman! Go to! (anſwered the Doctor, with a contemptuous look) take the beam out of thine own eye, before you find fault with the mote, in your neighbour's! What highwayman's crimes are equal to your's. The greateſt danger of ſcandal, that I ever ran, has been, in condeſcending to keep company with you. In that indeed I may be ſaid with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage the baſeſt crimes.'--------

The Matron, who with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook ſuch an inſult, as this, even from her ſpiritual guide, but catching up her glaſs, in the madneſs of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, ſhe flung it, at his head, with all her ſtrength, and with ſuch an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground.---'Woman!' (ſputtered ſhe, as ſoon as her paſſion permitted her, to articulate

late a word) 'Woman! Call your women about 'you! I ſcorn your words, you canting, hy- 'pocritical, vicious wretch, who under the ap- 'pearance of ſanctity, and religion, cheat the 'credulous fools, that mind you: you conde- 'ſcend to keep me company! you! a creature 'who would never have been taken notice of, 'had it not been for me! Did I not point you 'out the perſons, proper for you to work upon! 'Was it not I, that introduced you to thoſe very 'people of quality, that now make you give 'yourſelf ſuch airs? Were they not moſt of 'them my acquaintances, and even indebted to 'me, for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make 'you know yourſelf, you ſcoundrel! I will I'll 'expoſe you to the world, and then ſee who 'will go to your conventicle, or ſubſcribe to 'your ſham charities! I'll make you know how 'to treat your ſuperiors, for the future.'----

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury *Momus* and my maſter raiſed the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle, not to be deſcribed. The glaſs had been thrown, with ſuch ſtrength, that had not his ſkull been of a comfortable thickneſs, his labours would have been at an end; however, it had made ſuch a gaſh, on his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The ſight of this terrified them all! The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away, my maſter ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while *Momus* ſupported the Doctor, in his chair; but the firſt ſight of the wound convincing him, that it was not dangerous, he reſolved to improve the accident, to that diverſion, which was the great purſuit of his life.

'Good

'Good Heaven!' (ſaid he in a low voice, as if ſpeaking to himſelf, and with all the appearance of diſtreſs) 'What will become of us all! We 'ſhall all be ruined, by this unfortunate affair, 'even if we eſcape the death, which inevitably 'awaits the wretched Murdereſs.'--- 'O Sir!' (ſaid the Doctor, alarmed almoſt to deſpair) 'what do you think? Am I a dead man? Speak, 'I conjure you, give me ſome hopes!'--- 'Alas, 'my friend! I wiſh I could; but I muſt not 'flatter a man in your condition! If you have 'any concerns in this life, to ſettle, delay not a 'moment. This horrid fracture in your ſkull 'threatens immediate death. Heavens! (ſtooping and pretending to look earneſtly) How his 'brain works!'--- 'O what ſhall I do! (exclaimed the terrified wretch) I cannot die! I 'am not fit to die! Oh! that I had followed ſome 'honeſt trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I might then have earned honeſt bread, 'as my fore-fathers did, and eſcaped this miſerable death, and the more horrid fate, that awaits me! What ſhall I do? What will become 'of me? How can I even pray to that God, 'whom I have ſo often provoked by my hypocriſy, and crimes.'---

My maſter, by this time, had wiped the wound, and ſeeing that though it bled ſo violently, from the number of little veſſels, that are in that part, there was no fracture of the ſkull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, 'Sir, (ſaid he) you have time enough to prepare 'yourſelf for death! I'll enſure you from any 'danger, this time!'--- 'How, my deareſt, beſt 'friend!' (ſaid the Doctor, catching his hand, and kiſſing it in extaſy) 'Is my life ſafe? Is not

'the wound mortal?'---'Mortal! no! nor even 'dangerous; if the ſurgeons do not make it ſo! 'Give me leave to put a plaiſter to it, which I 'always have in readineſs, in the houſe, in caſe 'of accidents, as gentlemen often quarrel, for 'their women, in their liquor; and I'll engage 'that it ſhall give you no farther trouble. Many 'a guinea have I got by it, for when any ſuch 'thing happens, I immediately ſlip on a full trim'd 'ſuit, a big wig, and a ſword, which a ſurgeon 'once pawned to me for a debt of two guineas, 'and up I go, do the job, take my fee, and come 'away as good a ſurgeon as the beſt; never fear, 'Sir, I'll enſure you, from this ſcratch.'

The conſolation, which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expreſſed! He hugged and kiſſed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himſelf and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cauſe of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a ſwoon. But *Momus*, who ſaw his ſport with the Doctor thus cut ſhort, ſoon brought her to herſelf; for taking a glaſs of brandy, as if to hold to her noſe, in the affected awkwardneſs of his hurry and confuſion he ſpilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper, to try what that would do, he deſignedly neglected to blow it out, and ſo holding it to her noſe, ſet the brandy he had ſpilled upon her face, on fire. This inſtantly awoke her, from her ſwoon! She ſhrieked out, when he, in the ſame affected confuſion, flung the baſon of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been waſhed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and diſagreeable, as that of my maſter or the Doctor; the conſequence of which was,

that

that the Doctor could not refrain from burſting out a laughing. 'Well, my friend (ſaid he, taking her by the hand) it is but juſt, that you ſhould ſhare in the effects of your own raſhneſs. But let there be no more of it. We have both been in fault perhaps; and ſo let us only be more cautious, for the future. What I have ſuffered was done by deſign, and had like to have been attended with dreadful conſequences; your's is all accidental and trifling.'---

While the Doctor was thus piouſly making peace, my maſter was cleaning himſelf and ſetting the room to rights. *Momus* aſſiſted the Matron, to cram half a dozen napkins down her boſom, to dry the water he had bathed her with, which he performed with ſo well-acted an anxiety and care, that even ſhe was deceived, and attributed all that had happened to her, to his confuſion; and being glad to get ſo well off an affair that might have ended ſo much worſe, ſhe complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and ſo all things were reſtored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wounds, by a ready preſence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from ſome of *Momus*'s gang, who had attempted to aſſaſſinate him, in revenge of the contempt, into which he had brought their maſter.

Matters being thus happily ſettled, the reſt of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a ſong, in character, by each of the company, of which *Momus*'s was the moſt humourous, my maſter's the groſſeſt, the Matron's the looſeſt, and the Doctor's the moſt daringly

profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this the company broke up, when the Doctor having occaſion for ſome money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my maſter, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life, to marry.

CHAP. XI.

The Doctor pays a viſit to an uſeful friend. The myſtery of controverſy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation, for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of her Grace. Her diſappointment, in her viſit to the Priſon. Her Grace's character.*

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new maſter, who never neglected buſineſs for pleaſure, did not forget the *Exhortation*, which he was to carry to her Grace, the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of compoſing it himſelf: his time was too precious to be employed ſo: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entruſt to any other; as viſiting his great proſelytes, receiving, and diſtributing charity, and his inceſſant exerciſe of all the ſacerdotal functions, ſcarce allowed him time for the neceſſary refreſhments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burthen, had they been enjoyed, by the moſt expreſs revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleaſure of deceit, made him undertake

take them voluntarily; but ſtill to ſecure to himſelf, every degree of religious merit, he kept a moſt laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in conſtant employment, whoſe works he paſſed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them againſt himſelf.

To this learned perſon, therefore, he went, upon the preſent occaſion, and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth, on religion and politicks, to a company of chairmen, he told him his buſineſs, and deſired him to ſet about it directly. 'Good God, Sir, (ſaid 'the author) this is a very unſeaſonable time to 'ſet me upon ſuch a work. From five this morn-'ing, till eleven at night, have I laboured inceſ-'ſantly; and now when I have juſt ſtepped out, 'to take a little neceſſary refreſhment'---- 'Re-'freſhment! (anſwered my maſter) Tell me not 'of refreſhment, or any thing elſe! Either do 'my buſineſs, or ſay you will not! I can get e-'nough to undertake it, and gladly too, for leſs 'than I give you.'---'That is impoſſible (replied 'the author) if they are to live by it! I am ſure 'what you give me ſcarce keeps me from ſtarv-'ing!'---'Starving!' (returned my maſter) 'So 'it appears indeed! when you this moment have 'been indulging in riot and luxury, and ſmell ſo 'ſtrong of ſpirituous liquours, that it is offenſive 'to ſobriety to ſtand near you. I wonder you are 'not aſhamed to be guilty of ſuch intemperance! 'it ill becomes a man of morality and religion.'--'Sir, Sir,' (interrupted the author, provoked beyond his patience) 'Have ſome regard to truth, 'and reaſon, in what you ſay; and look at home, 'before you accuſe me of intemperance! I laboured the whole day, without any other re-

'freſhment, or ſuſtenance, than a mouthful of 'bread and cheeſe, and a draught of ſmall beer; 'and now have had only a quartern of gin, in a 'pint of warm porter, to waſh down half a pound 'of ſauſages, and you call this intemperance. If 'I may judge by appearances, you have not ſpent 'your evening on ſuch fare.'-- 'How I have 'ſpent my evening,' (returned my maſter, who, in ſpite of himſelf, felt the juſtice of the reproach) 'is nothing to the purpoſe! I am anſwerable for 'what I do! But this manner of talking ſignifies nothing; I muſt have this *Exhortation*, by 'eight in the morning: It will not take you up 'much time! You are ſufficiently practiſed in 'the ſtyle: the matter is of little conſequence! 'If you chuſe to drink a glaſs of wine, here is 'half a crown, which I make you a preſent of! 'I would by no means have you ſtinted of any 'thing, that is proper.'-- 'Sir' (anſwered the author) 'I am much obliged to you! I will take 'care, that it ſhall be ready at the time. You 'are ſenſible, that I never think much of any labour to ſerve you. I have finiſhed all the pamphlets, you ordered, about the ballad-ſinger's affair! Here they are: This is a letter from 'you, to him, that lays him flat; I have quoted 'half the fathers of the church againſt him!-- 'Theſe two are letters to you, upon the ſubject, one as from a great lord, the other from a 'reverend divine, ſetting forth the great benefits of your miniſtry, and expoſing the profaneneſs and immorality of his ballad.---This 'here is a ſilly vindication of his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his ranting companions; and this laſt is an addreſs to the public

'againſt

'againſt all thoſe irreligious, and profane amuſe-
'ments, of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a
'maſter-piece! You ſee it is, as from myſelf, if
'you do not chuſe to own it; though I do not
'know but it may have more weight with your
'enemies, if it appears, as from another. So you
'ſee I have worked hard to-day; and now I be-
'lieve we have done with Mr. *Momus*, and his
'ballad.'--- 'Why aye! pretty well, I believe
'(ſaid my maſter)--But hold, I have a thought,
'juſt come into my head: You muſt know that
'the Parſon of the Pariſh has ſent for that re-
'probate, that *Momus*, and ordered him to alter
'the tune of his ballad, as it happened to have
'ſeveral of the ſame notes, with the Pſalm tunes.
'Now as this is known, what do you think of
'writing a letter to me, as from the Parſon, ſet-
'ting forth what he has done, and inſinuating
'that it was by the direction of the ſquire? this
'will clinch the affair! After ſuch an authority
'no one will dare to ſay a word in it's behalf:
'beſide, it will have a good look to be taken no-
'tice of, by ſuch people.'-- 'That is true (an-
'ſwered the author) it will ſo, and the Parſon's
'notice ſhall not be thrown away; I'll do it, to-
'morrow morning; as ſoon as I ſend you the *Ex-*
'*hortation*.'-- My maſter then wiſhed him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himſelf went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had ſcarce ſlept off his debauch, when he was called to chaunt his matin ſong; after which he did not fail to diſplay the wound in his temple, the occaſion of which he promiſed to unfold to his congregation, in the evening. This he did

to raiſe a curioſity that ſhould gather his whole flock, to hear ſo extraordinary an affair, as he deſigned to propoſe a ſubſcription, when their paſſions ſhould be warmed by ſuch an horrid attempt upon their paſtor.

By the time he had finiſhed this firſt work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfaſhionably early as it was for a perſon of her rank to be even up,) dreſſed and waiting for him: 'Pleaſe your Grace 'ſaid he) here is the *Exhortation* your Grace 'deſired of me; and I pray Heaven it may prove 'ſucceſsful! I am afraid I have made your Grace 'wait, but I came the moment I had finiſhed 'the firſt duties, of the morning. If your Grace 'pleaſes, I will do myſelf the honour to accom-'pany your Grace: Perhaps my perſonal *Ex-'hortation* and prayer may have more effect: 'My miniſtry has often been bleſſed with 'aſtoniſhing ſucceſs.'--- 'I am ſenſible of that, 'Doctor, (anſwered her Grace;) but this un-'happy man is of ſuch a ſtrange temper, that 'I apprehend he might be guilty of ſome act 'of raſhneſs, that might be dangerous to your 'perſon, if you were to go to him, without his 'conſent; and that I am much afraid I ſhall 'hardly obtain. No longer ago, than yeſterday, 'near as the dreadful hour of his execution ap-'proaches, did I find him engaged at cards, with 'his gaoler; and when I expoſtulated with him, 'on tne danger of trifling away his few remaining 'moments, in ſo idle a manner (for I was ap-'prehenſive of exaſperating him, if I ſpoke with 'greater ſeverity) he only ſmiled, and anſwered 'me, with a paſſage, out of ſome play.'------

'Yes,

'Yes, pleaſe your Grace,' (replied my maſter with a lifted eye, and deep-fetched groan) 'Cards and plays are the bane of half the 'world: religion is quite neglected for them. 'The great work of reformation will never be 'compleated, till they are utterly aboliſhed. As 'your Grace does not think it meet, that I 'ſhould viſit this unfortunate gentleman, in per-'ſon, I am obedient to your Grace's pleaſure, 'however, I will offer up my prayers, for him; 'and my ſpirit ſhall aſſiſt your Grace's pious en-'deavours! Not that I fear what man can do 'unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over 'me, or the ſtroke, that made this wound, had 'given me reſt from my labours.'-----

He then diſplayed the mark of mother *Brimſtone*'s rage, and told her Grace ſo moving and circumſtantial a ſtory of his having been way-laid, and attacked by ſome of *Momus*'s riotous companions, that ſhe implicitely believed him, and ſympathized in his ſufferings. He then gave her the *Exhortation*, which ſhe was to deliver, to her unfortunate couſin, and ſeeing her uneaſy at being obliged to wait till the bank ſhould be open, to get money to diſtribute among the poor wretches, in the priſon, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) juſt ſo much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor induſtrious family, in great diſtreſs.

It was a great pleaſure to me, that I changed my ſervice upon this occaſion, as I was heartily ſick of my maſter; though from a view I took of his heart, I ſaw that I had not been witneſs to half the myſtery of his iniquity.

My new miſtreſs went directly to the priſon, to her couſin, where ſhe had a ſufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fellow-priſoners while ſhe waited for his riſing, which was not till very late, as he had ſat up the whole night before, at his beloved diverſion of card-playing. When at length ſhe got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble ſhe had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He aſked her if ſhe had procured him a pardon, and when ſhe anſwered in the negative, and aſſured him that all ſuch hopes were vain, he then told her, that he would diſpenſe with the continuance of her viſit, and the repetition of any more, and in a manner forced her away, ſcarce permitting her to mention the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exhortation* of my late maſter, which ſhe with difficulty perſwaded him to take, tho' from the manner of his receiving it, there was little probability of his ever taking the trouble to read it.

My miſtreſs, for I had the good fortune to remain in her poſſeſſion, was ſo ſhocked at this inſenſibility, that ſhe went directly home, and ſought relief from the ſolid comforts of religion, pouring out her heart, in unfeigned prayer, for the converſion of him, and every other object of the divine diſpleaſure; for tho' a miſguided fervency of devotion had made her, in ſome meaſure, a dupe to the hypocritical zeal of my late maſter, nothing could lead her from the pureſt paths of true piety and virtue; nor did ſhe ſuffer the extravagance of his pretended enthuſiaſm ſo far to blind her better judgment, as to make her avoid the entertainments frequented by perſons of her ſex, and rank.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Hiſtory of a Lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a rout. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a lady of enterprize. A bold ſtroke for an huſband.*

SHE, accordingly went that afternoon to the houſe of a lady of quality, where a great concourſe of the beſt company uſually aſſembled on ſet invitations to ſpend the evening, at the favourite amuſement of cards. The lady of the houſe was one of thoſe children of fortune, who riſe by the means, that ruin thouſands. In her early youth ſhe had ſacrificed her virtue to vanity, and yielded to the looſe deſires of the nobleman, ſhe was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaiſant blindneſs to his other amours, gained her ſuch an aſcendancy, that in a fit of uncommon fondneſs he made her his wife. But the method he took to ſecure himſelf the eaſe and conveniences he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaiſance were all feigned; and the neceſſity of counterfeiting them, being thus removed, ſhe immediately aſſumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the uſual prerogatives of it, in as high a manner, as if ſhe had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated huſband ſoon ſaw his errour; but it was too late to remedy it; he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he deſires, by ſubmitting to let her gratify her paſſion, for vain pomp and expenſive

penſive ceremony, under the parade of which ſhe ſtrives to hide her obſcure original, as ſhe attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue, by a moſt rigid profeſſion of religion. Thus, her routs are the moſt ſplendid, and difficult of acceſs, of any in the town, no perſon being invited but thoſe of the firſt rank, nor any, who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what will; and ſhe profeſſes herſelf a ſtrict follower of my late maſter, in his moſt extravagant opinions where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impoſſible to convey any notion, to you, of ſuch a ſcene as this, to which my miſtreſs carried me, it is ſo different from that ſphere in which you have acted. Suppoſe you ſee ſeveral hundred people of both ſexes, and of every age, dreſſed in all the profuſion and elegance of expence, and wearing diſſipation, and happineſs in their looks, aſſembled together, to ſpend the evening, in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverſe, and you ſhall behold a ſet of people, who have ſacrificed their real intereſt, and the peace of their minds, to the gratification of this, and ſuch like pleaſures, and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly the whole is one continued ſcene of ſharping, mutual diſtruſt, envy, ſlander, and malevolence; the very few, who like my miſtreſs come there for mere amuſement, and are untainted with ſuch vices, being forced to ſubmit in ſeeming acquieſcence, to the torrent they are not able to ſtem.

In the courſe of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my ſervice; but as the ſtay I made, with my momentary poſſeſſors was ſo very ſhort,

ſhort, I ſhall waive giving any account of them, eſpecially as the two moſt remarkable of the ſet, and under whom all the reſt, who launch out of the common road of life are in a great meaſure characteriſed, have been ſufficiently deſcribed, on a former occaſion, though the hiſtories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment; and haſten to the lady, in whoſe poſſeſſion, I left the company.

My new miſtreſs was the young widow of a perſon of great diſtinction, who in the decline of life had over-looked the diſparity of age and rank, and married her, ſolely to gratify his paſſion for her beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiſcretion within bounds, but as ſoon as that guard was removed, ſhe plunged into all the faſhionable follies of the times, with a keenneſs that courted ruin.

But though ſhe eagerly followed every purſuit, that bore the name of pleaſure, vanity was the ruling paſſion of her heart. The rank, into which her huſband had lifted her, placed her upon a level, in point of ſociety, with the beſt company, and the fortune he left her was ſufficient to ſupport that rank. But ſtill, as there were many degrees above her; her heart pined for precedency, and ſhe could not enjoy the honours ſhe had, while ſhe was obliged to give place to ſo many.

She had formed a variety of ſchemes to obtain this deſired object, but ſtill without ſucceſs. At length, the very night I came into her poſſeſſion, an accident ſuggeſted one to her, which ſhe immediately put in execution, with the moſt ſanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the firſt rank, in the company, the weakneſs of whoſe

whoſe reaſon had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a perſon, to whoſe fidelity they thought they could entruſt ſo important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public converſation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company, with ſeveral melancholy inſtances of his weakneſs. My miſtreſs regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till ſome time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye, with ſome earneſtneſs upon her, a ſudden thought darted into her mind, that if ſhe could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took poſſeſſion of her head, it drove out every other. She loſt deal! She revoked! She miſſed reckoning her honours! In ſhort ſhe was ſo abſent, that ſhe was obliged to pretend a violent head-ach, and leave the company. As ſoon as ſhe got home, ſhe went to bed, where ſhe ſpent the night in forming numberleſs projects, for accompliſhing her deſign; but ſtill, the account which the old lady had given of the vigilance of the perſon to whoſe care the nobleman was entruſted, diſconcerted them all. At length, ſhe reſolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as ſhe could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greateſt honeſty was not proof againſt a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too raſh, nor betray her deſign, before ſhe had ſome proſpect of ſucceſs, ſhe reſolved to ſound the perſon, before ſhe applied directly to him.

Accordingly,

Accordingly, as ſoon as ſhe got up, ſhe wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a perſon had a certain affair to propoſe to him, for his concurrence, in which he ſhould receive immediately a thouſand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beſide ſeveral other conſiderable advantages; and that what he was deſired to do could be effected, without any poſſible loſs, or danger to himſelf. This letter ſhe ſent by the penny-poſt, and deſired the anſwer might be returned in the ſame manner, under a feigned direction, to the houſe of a perſon, in whom ſhe confided.

Such a letter neceſſarily ſurprized the gentleman to whom it was ſent. Though the greatneſs of the offer convinced him that ſome extraordinary piece of villainy was deſigned, yet, as he knew himſelf above temptation, he reſolved to humour the ſcheme, till he ſhould diſcover the whole of it, for the honeſt revenge of puniſhing a baſe attempt to ſeduce him into diſhoneſty. Accordingly he anſwered the letter directly, in ſuch terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expreſſing his readineſs to embrace any propoſal, that ſhould be ſo advantageous, when he ſhould be ſatisfied, that the perſon who made it, was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took, as he deſired. My miſtreſs, whoſe eager imagination was too full of the deſired object, to let her uſe any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which ſhe ſigned her name, and in it explained her whole ſcheme of marrying the nobleman, by his aſſiſtance, enforcing her former offer, by a promiſe of continuing him, in the

the agency of the eſtate, or rather indeed of ſharing it with him, and deſiring to meet him that evening either at her houſe, or any other place he pleaſed, to confer upon proper means, for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loſs how to act, on ſuch an occaſion: he immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and ſhewing both the letters, deſired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was ſtruck with horror at a piece of villainy that did ſuch diſhonour to the ſex, reſpect for the memory of the worthy man, whoſe name ſhe bore, would not permit him to expoſe her to public inſult; however, to prevent her making the like attempt elſewhere, he reſolved to ſhock her, by a perſonal detection; accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be ſeen going to her houſe, but that if ſhe pleaſed he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where ſhe ſhould enquire for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a proſpect of immediate ſucceſs, made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly ſhe prepared to attend the appointment, with the moſt ſanguine expectation.

But his lordſhip had prepared a reception for her, which ſhe never ſuſpected. A little before the time, he went to the tavern, with the gentleman, and fixing upon a room in which there was a cloſet, large enough for him, and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word that if any lady ſhould enquire, for Mr. *Trueman*, ſhe ſhould be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged,

judged, her impatience brought her, rather before the time, when her imagined confederate ſhewing her up into the room, and placing her ſo, that every word ſhe ſaid might be heard, in the cloſet, he entered into a converſation with her, on the ſubject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole propoſal, and by ſtarting difficulties, to enforce it, with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As ſoon as his lordſhip thought ſhe had ſaid enough, he iſſued from his concealment, and looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care ſhe was taking to preſerve the noble family of his relation, which ſhe had whimſically given, as one of the reaſons of her deſiring this marriage. It is impoſſible to deſcribe her ſituation, at the ſight of this nobleman, whom ſhe well knew, as well as his intereſt in defeating her deſign. Aſtoniſhment, ſhame, and confuſion ſtruck her motionleſs and dumb. She juſt was able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a ſwoon upon the floor. Such diſtreſs naturally ſoftened the reſentment of the generous nobleman, to whom ſhe had deſigned ſuch an injury: he aſſiſted to raiſe her, from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herſelf, inſtead of aggravating her diſtreſs by reproaches, mildly adviſed her to deſiſt from ſuch unjuſtifiable ſchemes, and promiſed her that he would take no notice of what had happened if he found that her future conduct merited ſuch tenderneſs.

This treatment had the wiſhed effect. That falſe ſpirit which would have borne her up againſt any ſeverity, ſunk before ſuch unexpected delicacy and compaſſion. She melted into a flood of tears; and unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees

and

and kiſſed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expreſſed; who immediately raiſed her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined, it muſt be diſagreeable to her to ſtay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himſelf, with the utmoſt politeneſs and reſpect.

Her ſituation, when ſhe got home, was truly pitiable. The aſſurance of her late hopes doubled the diſtreſs of her diſappointment, and the fear of ſhame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She curſed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithleſs man; and in the agony of her grief reſolved to leave this deteſted town next morning, and bury herſelf for ever, from the world, in her country-ſeat.

This reſolution ſhe held till next morning, when ſhe actually ſet out for the country; but I have reaſon to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently ſeen her ſince, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me; I was given to her coach-man, to pay the farrier, who took care of her horſes; but he thought it more neceſſary to give me, in payment of a debt of his own to a man, who kept a beer-houſe, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him againſt a proſecution for entertaining a gang of ſtreet-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the courſe of buſineſs, to a knight of the poſt, whoſe evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conſcientious perſon, as he was on his way to a country aſſizes, where the lives of many depended on his good-nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who

who loſt me that evening to a nobleman at an horſe-race.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL, *by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of the induſtry, who brings him to an horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.*

IN the three or four laſt changes of my ſervice there was nothing remarkable. The progreſſion was natural, and the events common: but I muſt own I was a good deal ſurprized at ſeveral occurrences in my preſent ſtation, which were, in the proper courſe of things, ſo ſtrange and unaccountable, that the moſt whimſical devil could never have thought of them, without information.

The *gentleman* who had acquired me ſo eaſily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his ſkill, in the myſterious ſcience of *chance*, ſupported by a good ſtock of aſſurance and perſonal courage, had come over to make his fortune, in which deſign he had really ſo far ſucceeded, that he had lived, for ſeveral years, in the higheſt life, and maintained the appearance of the eſtate he talked of in his own country, by the ſole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one reſource; but when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always

ways ready to redreſs the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his poſſeſſion.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than uſual, ſo that the company were at the *poſt*, when he joined them. By their noiſe and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a croud of their own ſervants; their dreſs being exactly the undreſs uniform, of that party-coloured tribe; and every voice being exerted with the ſame vehemence, and in the like ſtyle of oaths and imprecations, with which thoſe gentry receive them, at the door of a play-houſe or palace, ſo that I ſcarce knew how to believe my ſenſes, when I recognized the faces of ſeveral perſons of the moſt elevated ſtation, and particularly, moſt of thoſe among whom I had ſpent the evening, I deſcribed to you at the *club*, on my firſt coming to this part of the world.

As ſoon as the *bets* were *made*, and the noiſe began to ſubſide a little, my maſter preſſed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockies, and came up to the poſt, juſt as they were preparing to *ſtart*, when calling to one of the grooms, '*Well*, my lord,' (ſaid he); '*Well*, 'Jack, (replied the other) where have you been 'all day?' This was all the diſcourſe they had time for, the horſes going off, that moment: but on the ſtrength of this, my maſter *backed* his lordſhip deeply.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe to you, who have never ſeen any thing of the kind, a ſcene of ſuch confuſion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving againſt each other,

other, without any reſpect to rank, or regard to ſafety, and roaring out their bets, and ſhouting for joy, at every viciſſitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but ſo contrary to my maſter's expectation, that he loſt, to a noble duke, who was in the ſecret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large ſum beſides, more than he was able to pay him.

This was a ſevere ſtroke. He rode directly up to the poſt, and addreſſing the ſame groom, juſt as he came out of the *ſcales*; 'S blood, my lord, (ſaid he) how could you *fling* me ſo. I am quite broke up: his Grace has *touched* me for 500, and the devil of the thing is, that I have been ſo *torn* down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of caſh, and have not a ſhilling to pay him.' ---- 'How could this be, (replied the groom) did I not give you the *word?* but you are ſuch a careleſs ſon of a bitch.'--- 'The word with a vengeance, (anſwered my maſter) you returned my *well*, but I have found it very ill.'--- 'Aye, I gueſſed it was ſo, (added the groom) you were ignorant that we were *ſmoaked*, and found it neceſſary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning? taking a ride, I ſuppoſe; you will never leave off, till theſe rides bring you to a ride in a cart to Tyburn: but keep out of his Grace's way till the horſes ſtart, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the ſecret, but he is miſtaken this bout, and ſhall pay for his entrance before we admit him to be *one of us*.'--- This diſcourſe paſſed as they were walking together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub*, and *ſettle* the next heat.

You

You are ſurprized at this familiarity, between my maſter, and the groom. When he firſt addreſſed him by the title of, *My lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which in the freedom of this intercourſe, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aſtoniſhment at a nearer view, to ſee that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every the meaneſt art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding againſt him, to take the place of their ſervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condeſcenſion, the moſt abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their anceſtors. Strange ambition, at a time when the intereſt and glory of their country called for their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as the noble groom and my maſter were alone; 'Now, Jack, what think you of my 'little *ſtun-orſe?* (ſays his lordſhip.) You muſt 'know that I have *meaſured the foot* of them 'all, in this heat, and find that I *have the heels* 'by a *diſtance* at leaſt; but the weights are above 'my *trim*. However, we have a remedy for 'that; look at this cap (taking one out of a 'cheſt, in which his running dreſs had been 'brought to the ground,) this is a *leaden ſkull*, 'and weighs above two *ſtun*; put this on your 'head, the thickneſs of your own ſkull will pre-'vent its giving you the head-ach: aye, it fits 'you very well. Now I will wear this to the 'poſt, and juſt before we ſtart, complain that 'my cap is too wide, and borrow your's to ride 'in, and then when I alight at the *ſcales*, after 'the heat is over, I will pull off your's, as if to

'wipe

'wipe my face, and give it to you to hold, who 'can return me this, to weigh in, and as I wear 'the ſame truſſes, ſtuffed with handkerchiefs, in 'which I carried the weight laſt heat, they will 'never ſuſpect us. ---- Ha, Jack, what ſay you 'to this! match me this, among all your *Hi-* 'bernian tricks if you can. Go your way: 'double with his Grace, and *lay* all you can, 'I'll *go* with you; but be ſure to meet me at 'the poſt before, and at the ſcales after the heat, 'and not to blow the buſineſs, by being in too 'great an hurry'.

I ſee you wonder how his lordſhip ſhould put ſuch confidence in my maſter, as he ſeemed to know him ſo well; but the truth was, my maſter's character for courage was ſo well eſtabliſhed, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at leaſt, if not unſuſpected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried; and this made the other think him the ſafeſt perſon to entruſt with the execution of ſuch a ſcheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordſhip. --- The fineſſe ſucceeded; his lordſhip *beat every tail hollow*; and my maſter not only *cleared* with his Grace, but alſo won conſiderably for himſelf, and his confederate beſide. Things were carried on, in the ſame genteel manner, for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vaſt concourſe of the beſt company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the ſport very fine, and ſo fair that *the knowing-ones were all taken in*; and to make the pleaſure compleat, though the croud was ſo great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one

of

of whom was borne down in the *croſſing*, by the ſuperior ſtrength of a ſervant, who rode againſt him, and *ſlipped* his ſhoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horſe's falling in the running.

It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the bye-matches, that I was loſt that evening, to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new maſter's return to London, he went to pay his court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country ſeats.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL*'s maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation,* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly offer for very odd reaſons. His ſtrange notion of ſome affairs.*

SOME publick occaſion had brought a concourſe more than uſual, in thoſe retirements, to pay their duty to the prince that morning. As my maſter was one of the laſt who came, as ſoon as his devoirs were ended, ſome of the company accidentally aſked him, what had kept him ſo late; on which, with an eaſy air of pleaſantry, he anſwered aloud, that 'He had been detained 'by a very whimſical affair: a certain nobleman, '(ſaid

'(ſaid he) went into company laſt night, ſo *im-*
'*menſely* drunk, that having ſet in to play, and
'loſt five thouſand pound, he quite forgot it this
'morning, and refuſed to pay the money, till
'ſome perſon of honour, who was unconcerned
'in the matter, ſhould vouch his having loſt it
'fairly, on which it was referred to me, and
'ſorry I am, that I was qualified to give it
'againſt him.' --- 'How, my lord, by being a
'perſon of honour!' ſays the gentleman he ſpoke
'to --- 'No, (replied my maſter, with a ſigni-
'ficant ſmile) not ſo neither, but by being un-
'concerned in winning it.' --- And then turning
ſhort to another, 'But have you heard the news,
'my lord? (ſaid he.) Mr. --------- caught his
'wife yeſterday taking a ſerious walk in Ken-
'ſington gardens, with the gentleman whom we
'all know to be forbad her keeping company with,
'ſome time ago.' --- A ſmile of general approba-
tion encouraged him ſo much, that he con-
cluded with ſaying, 'he wiſhed he had himſelf
'been the happy delinquent ſo taken, as he
'doubted not but the graveſt biſhop on the bench
'would, were he to ſpeak his mind honeſtly.'

The prince had heard him without interrup-
tion; but as ſoon as he had ended, turning to a
nobleman who ſtood near him, 'There can be
'no greater inſult (ſaid he, with a determined
'look and ſolemn accent) to a perſon who is
'appointed to put the laws of a country in exe-
'cution, than for any one, to boaſt of a breach
'of thoſe, in his preſence. For my part, if I
'am ever called by Providence to that ſtation,
'it is my invariable reſolution, that no man,
'how exalted ſoever in rank, who lives in open
'violation of any law, human or divine, ſhall

'ever hold employment under me, or receive 'countenance from me.'

This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, as it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abaſhed. But he ſoon recovered, and to ſilence the jeſts of his companions, and ſhew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to ſpend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was ſent, in the change of a note, to the firſt miniſter of ſtate.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politicks, made me enter into this ſervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was ſoon removed. My new maſter was juſt coming from his cloſet when I was delivered to him; he ſtopped to count the money, then putting it into his purſe, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand, --- 'I 'muſt have all theſe finiſhed againſt morning, '(ſaid he) that I may be able to read them over, 'before they are ſigned. I know they are a 'great many, but the buſineſs requires diſpatch; 'and diligence and method overcome the greateſt 'difficulties.' --- Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with ſeveral of the moſt eminent members of the community, who came, ſome to conſult, ſome to adviſe, (for he refuſed not the advice of the meaneſt) and all to congratulate him on the ſucceſs of his meaſures.---When the buſineſs and formality of this

ſcene

ſcene were over, the company withdrew all but one gentleman, who deſired ſome private converſation with my maſter. As ſoon as they were alone, 'I have done myſelf the honour to wait 'upon you this morning, (ſaid the gentleman) 'to inform you, that there is a vacancy in my 'borough, and to know whom you would have 'me return, for as I ſee that all your meaſures 'are evidently calculated for the good of your 'country, I am determined to ſupport you.'

'I am much obliged to your good opinion, '(anſwered my maſter) but I am reſolved never 'to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to 'attempt influencing the election or vote of any 'perſon, by any other means than reaſon: all 'therefore that I have to aſk is, that you will 'return an honeſt man; while he approves of 'my conduct he will certainly ſupport me, and 'no longer do I wiſh to be ſupported.'

'What, ſir! (replied the gentleman in aſtoniſh-'ment) not deſire to have your friends returned! 'Why, ſir, is it poſſible that you can be a ſtranger 'to the intrigues that are forming againſt you, by 'a faction, who, when they had reduced the ſtate 'to a meer *wreck*, like a cowardly, mutinous 'crew, flew in the face of their maſter, took the 'boat and made their eſcape to ſhore; and now, 'when you have not only brought her ſafe into 'harbour, but alſo fitted her out for another 'voyage, with every proſpect of ſucceſs, are 'caballing to undermine and turn you away from 'the helm: not that they even pretend to ar-'raign your conduct or ſkill, but juſt that they 'may have the pillaging the fruits of your la-'bours. As this, ſir, is notoriouſly the caſe, 'you muſt excuſe the warmth of my honeſt zeal,

'when I tell you, that I think you muſt be guilty 'of very ſtrange, very blameable remiſneſs, if 'you neglect any poſſible method of diſappoint-'ing their pernicious deſigns.'

'My friend, (returned my maſter) I am too 'ſenſible of the truth of all you ſay, but hope 'there is no neceſſity for my having recourſe to 'methods which my ſoul diſapproves. With-'out the aſſiſtance of any ſuch did I (to purſue 'your mode of ſpeech) firſt point out to our 'maſter, and the reſt of the ſhip's company, 'the errors in their ſteering, the rocks they were 'ready to run upon, and the way to avoid them. 'Without any ſuch did I take the helm in that 'dangerous time, when they fled from the wreck, 'and work'd her out of the breakers they left her 'among, and without any ſuch will I ſupport 'my place at the helm, or reſign it, for in my 'opinion, no end can juſtify improper means.

'Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer 'gives me pain. Do not miſtake me; I am 'ſincerely obliged to you for that good opinion 'which dictated it to your honeſt heart; but the 'truth is, that any member of the community's 'having the power of making ſuch an offer, 'proves ſuch a degeneracy in our conſtitution, 'as threatens its overthrow in the end. A par-'liament ſhould be a repreſentative of the people; 'but how can it be ſaid to be that, if the people 'are not at liberty to chuſe whom they pleaſe to 'repreſent them? beſide, ſuch a manner of *no-'minating* diſappoints the end, as well as it de-'ſtroys the eſſence of a parliament, as it is too 'probable that the nominator ſhall ſtipulate 'conditions with *his* member, that may not only 'take away his power of voting according to the

'dictates

'dictates of his judgment and conſcience, but 'alſo enjoin ſuch as may be directly oppoſite to 'both, and injurious, if not deſtructive, to that 'country, which he thus *nominally* repreſents. 'A parliament therefore to be *free* ſhould be '*freely* choſen, no man having it in his power to 'do more than give his own vote; and ſuch a 'parliament, to keep up to the excellence of its 'nature in its firſt inſtitution, ſhould not con-'tinue longer than one ſeſſion; but a new one 'be called as often as the occaſions of the ſtate 'ſhould require it, once in every year at leaſt, 'for ſo often does the intereſt of a nation de-'mand, that its guardians ſhould meet. Such 'a parliament, ſenſible of the ſhortneſs of the 'duration, and nature of the tenure of their 'power, would take care never to act againſt 'the intereſt of their conſtituents; or if human 'frailty ſhould err, their time would be too ſhort 'to eſtabliſh the evil, and as it would be im-'poſſible for them to be choſen again, the next 'parliament would remedy the miſchief.--Such 'ſhould a Britiſh parliament be! ſuch I hope it 'will be! It is every honeſt Briton's duty to hope 'ſo; and not only that, but to endeavour to 'make it ſo; nor ſhall any act of mine ever 'ſeem to countenance a practice, that contradicts 'this principle. By ſpeaking and acting in ſtrict 'conformity to the dictates of *my* judgment and 'conſcience, have I hitherto ſucceeded, con-'trary to the apprehenſions of many, beyond 'the expectations of all; and the ſame means 'and none other will I ever purſue.'----'Heaven 'bleſs your pious intentions;' (ſaid the gentle-man, taking his hand and kiſſing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face) 'heaven

'will bleſs them: happy ſovereign in ſuch a 'ſervant; happy Britain in ſuch a guardian.'--- Saying this, he took his leave of my maſter, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon, for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command.* CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon.*

THE firſt view of this auguſt perſon ſtruck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but we ſee through all diſguiſe, and read the real character, in the heart. Honeſt, benevolent, and humane, the ſocial virtues brightened the royal, in his breaſt. --- 'Sire, 'ſaid my maſter, addreſſing him, with the moſt 'reſpectful ſincerity) here are the diſpatches 'which you ordered me to draw up yeſterday: 'ſince I had the honour of your commands then, I 'have received ſome farther intelligence, that con-'firms the juſtice of your reſolutions. Diſappoint-'ed, but not deterred by the repulſe which they 'juſtly met with from you, thoſe people have the 'confidence to make a new attempt, and think to 'obtain

'obtain by menaces, what was refuſed to their in-
'treaties; but the event will convince them, that
'it is more difficult to a generous mind, to deny
'the ſuppliant, than repulſe the inſolent. Strong
'in the natural ſtrength of your dominions, and
'ſtronger in the love of your people, you are
'able to aſſert your own cauſe, againſt all the
'powers of the world, on that element, which
'nature has pointed out, for the ſcene of your
'triumphs; nor will you permit any other to in-
'terfere with you, on it. All you require is a
'neutrality, where you are intitled to aſſiſtance.
'This ſhews your confidence in your own
'ſtrength, and your contempt of them. But
'even this contempt will not overlook any diſ-
'reſpect to yourſelf, any partiality to your ene-
'mies. Let them either behave themſelves as
'friends, or profeſs themſelves foes. --- This
'choice is indifferent to you. As to their com-
'plaints, their own unjuſt actions are the cauſe
'of them, and when this is removed, they will
'ceaſe of courſe. Till then to ſeek a remiſſion
'of the puniſhment, and ſtill perſiſt in the crime,
'is an inſult upon juſtice and mercy; and for
'their menaces, they are beneath the notice of
'an anſwer.'

'Be it ſo,' (replied the reverend monarch, the indignation of his honeſt heart flaſhing from his eyes;) 'be it ſo: you ſpeak the ſentiments of my 'ſoul.' --- Then turning to a favoured ſubject, who ſtood near him, 'It is a pleaſure to me to 'tranſact buſineſs, with this man, (continued 'he;) he makes me underſtand him, and does 'not perplex my ſoul, with a vain maze of 'timorous wiles, but ſpeaks and acts with open 'honeſty and boldneſs.'--- The honour of this

teſtimony warmed the heart of my maſter with a joy, that over paid his labours, and added new fire to the aſſiduity of his ſoul. As ſoon as he went home, he found a perſon waiting for him whom he had appointed to meet him, on an affair of the greateſt importance. --- 'I have ſent for 'you, my friend, (ſaid my maſter) on an oc- 'caſion, which, I am ſenſible, will give joy to 'your heart. You are to command a ſeparate 'body of the troops, which have been ſent to pro- 'ſecute this neceſſary and juſt war, in America. 'I need not put myſelf, nor you, to the pain of 'repeating the cauſes of the ſhameful inactivity, 'to give it no ſeverer name, by which this war 'has been drawn into ſuch a length; you know, 'and will avoid them. You will not wear out 'opportunity, in making unneceſſary prepara- 'tions for improbable occaſions: you will not 'damp the ardour of your ſoldiers by delay, nor 'prolong a burthenſome war, to enrich yourſelf, 'with the ſpoils of your country. You are 'young, active, and brave: ſuch a commander 'only do Britiſh ſoldiers want, to lead them to 'victory. You have no ſenior, no ſuperior here, 'to reſtrain the efforts of your ſpirit, by timid 'caution; at the ſame time, that your judgment 'will ſupply the place of experience, and pre- 'vent your falling into the misfortunes, which 'ſelf-ſufficient, brutal raſhneſs has made ſo fatal 'to others. Your inſtructions are comprized in 'a few words, --- make the beſt uſe your judg- 'ment ſhall direct you, of the forces entruſted 'to your command, to defend the property, and 'avenge the wrongs of your fellow-ſubjects; 'and to vindicate the honour of this abuſed na- 'tion. --- I know whom I ſpeak to, and there-

'fore

'fore I ſay no more: proceed, my friend, my 'ſoldier, anſwer my expectations, and you will 'fulfil the wiſhes of your country.'----Saying thus he embraced him tenderly, and as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the ſtreet, he ſaw a number of diſabled ſoldiers, who had placed themſelves before his window, to ſollicit relief for their miſeries.------'O, my 'friend, (continued he, graſping his hand) be-'hold thoſe victims of the unjuſt ambition of that 'enemy, againſt whom you go; and let the 'ſight add the wings of an eagle to your 'haſte, to tear down a power, which has been 'thus fatal to ſo many of your brave countrymen, 'to prevent any more from ſuffering the like 'evils, from the ſame cauſe.' '*The man who does* '*not uſe, to the beſt advantage, the means entruſt-*'*ed to him by his country, to deſtroy its enemies,* '*is guilty of all the evils, which thoſe enemies may* '*afterwards do to his country.*'---'Shall I beg a 'favour of my friend? diſtribute this money, '(giving him an handful of Guineas) among 'thoſe men, as from yourſelf. If it is not enough 'to give each a guinea, I will be your debtor 'for what is wanting; if it is more, keep the 'reſidue in your hands, to apply to the ſame uſe 'on the firſt occaſion you meet. This much will 'relieve their real wants, and more might only 'tempt them to exceſs. The invidiouſneſs of 'my ſtation makes it improper for me to do even 'an act of virtue, which may be miſtaken for 'oſtentation. Adieu, my friend, heaven guard 'you in the day of battle, and guide your ſword 'to victory.'

I here quitted the ſervice of this great man, the inſtances of whoſe conduct, which I have

given, make any farther character of him unneceſſary.

The regard, with which the miniſter had addreſſed himſelf to my preſent maſter, raiſed my curioſity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his poſſeſſion directly: but my fears were agreeably diſappointed; for the number of guineas, given to him by my maſter, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be diſtributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entruſted to him, warmed his heart with the moſt exalted joy. He executed his charitable commiſſion, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee, to his beloved mother, and kiſſing her hand in rapture, 'O, madam, (ſaid he) congratulate 'your happy ſon. My prayers at length are 'heard, and I am bleſſed with an opportunity 'of proving to the world, my attachment to 'the ſervice, my ardour for the glory of my 'country: I am honoured with a ſeparate com-'mand, in America, where heaven fires my 'ſoul with an aſſurance, that I ſhall have the 'happineſs of cruſhing the injurious power of 'our enemies, in the very place where it firſt at-'tacked my country; where it has too long 'triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bleſs my ſon,' (replied the matron, as ſoon as a guſh of tears of joy and tenderneſs permitted her to ſpeak) 'heaven guard my ſon, 'and bleſs his pious hopes. Let me only live 'to ſee him return with the honour of having 'done his duty, and I ſhall die contented. But 'why do I ſay this, as if my heart felt a doubt,

'for

'for him? *my* ſon will never fail to do his duty, 'he will never fall from the paths of honour; 'however dangerous, nor ſeek to colour over 'with ſpecious arguments the loſs of his honour. 'He will not make his mother aſhamed of hav- 'ing borne him, nor bring her grey hairs with 'diſgrace and ſorrow to the grave. I know the 'inſtructions which have formed his youth, I 'know the principles of his heart, I know my 'own blood better.--- But, O my ſon, remem- 'ber alſo, that prudence diſtinguiſhes true cou- 'rage from raſhneſs: that your counry has now 'a peculiar intereſt in your life, and that you 'betray its truſt, if you loſe it by any unneceſſary 'boldneſs. Remember your aged mother, who 'hangs weeping over her grave, till you return. 'Remember your-------

'O, my mother, no more! recal not ideas, 'which my preſent ſituation requires me to for- 'get. Fear not, your ſon will not be a diſ- 'grace to the honeſt race from which he is 'ſprung. He will do his duty as a ſoldier, a 'Britiſh ſoldier, and as a man, ſenſible of the 'obligations of reaſon and religion. Whether 'I ſhall ever have the happineſs of kiſſing this 'hand again, is only known to heaven; but it 'is in my power to promiſe, that the name of 'your ſon ſhall never raiſe a bluſh in the face 'of his mother, nor his actions require the pal- 'liation of excuſe from his friends. If life is to 'be ſhort, let it be well filled: one day of glory 'is better than an age of idleneſs, or diſhonour. 'Adieu, my mother; your bleſſing is a ſhield 'to the head, a ſupport to the ſoul of your ſon; 'one tender parting more, and then my heart 'muſt be reſigned to other cares.'----'Heaven 'bleſs!

'bleſs! heaven guard my ſon!' and then, as he went from her, 'O glory what a tribute doſt 'thou exact from wretched mortals!'

My maſter pauſed a moment to wipe away the pious tear, which filial duty owed to ſuch a parting, and then haſted to another ſcene of equal tenderneſs.

Mutual merit had improved the inſtinctive liking of youth, between my maſter and a young lady, whoſe elevated rank and large fortune were her leaſt recommendations, into the ſtrongeſt attachment of real love. As reaſon could make no objection on either ſide, parental approbation gave its ſanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day, that was to ſeal their bliſs. Hard taſk upon a favoured lover, to communicate to the choſen of his ſoul, the order which was to damp riſing expectation, by this delay; and tear him from the inſtant hope of that happineſs, which he had ſo long been ſuing for. But honour, and the ſervice of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory, to which his ſoul aſpired.

CHAP. XVI.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned, romantick ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS ſoon as he had recovered from the ſoftneſs, into which his mother's tenderneſs had melted him, he went directly to his miſtreſs. She received him with the freedom proper, in their preſent ſituation, but ſoon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that ſhewed her, his heart was not at eaſe. This alarmed her tender fears: 'What (ſaid ſhe, looking earneſtly at 'him) can make a troubled gloom overcaſt that 'face, where hope and happineſs have, for ſome 'time, brightened every ſmile. Can any thing 'have happened to diſturb the proſpect ſo pleaſ-'ing to us! Can you feel a grief that you think 'me unworthy, or unable to ſhare with you! it 'muſt be ſo: that faint, that laboured ſmile be-'trays the ſickneſs of your heart.'

'O deareſt wiſh of that heart, (replied he, 'taking her hand, and kiſſing it in extaſy) how 'ſhall I merit ſuch perfection! It is impoſſible: 'I am unworthy: but let my ſoul thank heaven 'for bleſſing it, with this opportunity, of riſing 'nearer to a level with your virtues; an hope 'that will ſoften the ſeverity of abſence, and 'make the delay of happineſs ſeem ſhorter.'

'*What*

'*What canſt thou mean?*' (ſaid ſhe, a jealous doubt alarming her delicacy) ---'*Delay! I underſtand thee not ---- I urge not.* -------' Miſtake not, O my love, the inconſiſtencies which anguiſh extorts from my bleeding heart --- How can I ſay it! --- Our happineſs is delayed,---- delayed but to be more exalted--- Honour, the ſervice of my country calls.'----'*And am I to be left?*'---' But for a time, a little time, the pain of which ſhall be overpaid, by the joy of meeting, never to part again. ---- O ſpare my heart, reſtrain thoſe tears; I am not worthy, I am not proof to ſuch a trial. ---- The intereſt, the glory of my country demand my ſervice, and my gracious maſter has honoured me with a ſtation, in which my endeavours may be effectual, to accompliſh his commands --- nay, muſt be effectual, where love urges duty, where you are the ineſtimable reward.' --- '*If that reward is all you ſeek, why do you fly from it? My fortune is amply ſufficient! Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let us retire, and ſeek true happineſs in content.*' ----' O ſpare my ſtruggling heart; what can I, ſhall I do! --- The trial is too great for human fortitude! Aſſiſt me, glory! help, O my country! ſupport me through this conflict, and I ſhall triumph over every other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but to deſerve thee.'------'*Go! go! and heaven guide and guard your ſteps!*' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears) '*I ſhall no longer ſtruggle with the ſacred impulſe, that leads you on, to glory.*'---Then turning to him, '*But remember how you leave me! --- Think what I feel, till you return!---*' *What I muſt be, ſhould* -------- The horror of this

this thought made her unable to ſay more: he flew into her arms, and mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his boſom, in the tenderneſs of a chaſte embrace, 'This is too 'much; (ſaid he) this is too much! ---- I never 'can repay this exceſs of goodneſs.' ---- Then breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthuſiaſm----- 'Heaven gives my ſoul (continued he) 'this foretaſte of happineſs, as an earneſt of ſuc-'ceſs; I go to certain victory: the prayers of 'angels muſt prevail.' --- Saying theſe words, he ruſhed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier ſtate: the thought of parting from her damping the ardour, that had enabled him to give that proof of his reſolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears, to ſuch a ſacrifice.

But glory and the intereſt of his country ſoon diſſipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of ſuch painful ſcenes of tenderneſs, reſumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking, with the moſt indefatigable aſſiduity. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee the effects of theſe cares; ſuch objects as I was deſigned for, occured too frequently, to the firſt of whom, it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly eſtabliſhed, on the principles of virtue, than there. To ſelect any one inſtance would be injuſtice to the reſt. All was uniformly great and good.

My next maſter was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the ſcalp of his head, to raiſe the trophies of the *French* in *America*. Though he was deſtitute of almoſt every comfort, which nature really

really ſtands in need of, his firſt care, on the acquiſition of ſuch a treaſure, as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-ſhop, where he *changed* me for a quartern of that liquid fire; the taſte of which was too pleaſing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be ſatisfied with ſo little. Quartern followed quartern, till every ſenſe was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor, when his good-natured hoſt had him kindly laid to ſleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, firſt taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the ſtreets from robbing him of the reſt of his treaſure, by picking his pocket of it, himſelf.---The ſcenes I ſaw in this ſervice, were all of the ſame kind, but I was ſoon relieved from the pain of them, my maſter giving me, as a preſent to an officer of the cuſtoms, that very night.---By this faithful ſteward of the publick I was next morning given by the factor to a gang of ſmugglers, to be laid out for him in lace, in *Flanders*, whither he was juſt going, on the affairs of his profeſſion. With this induſtrious trader, I went as far as *Harwich*, where while they waited for the tide, he loſt me at a game of cribbidge, to a perſon who was going over with him.

My new maſter was *honeſt Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As ſoon as they had done playing, my maſter took a walk upon the beach with a perſon, who ſtrongly reſembled him, and whom I found to be his ſon. 'I wiſh (ſaid the father) 'that we were ſafe at our journey's end; for 'though I have planned matters ſo well, that I 'think there can be no danger, the immenſe 'conſequence at ſtake muſt make me anxious.'---

'I do

'I do not underſtand you, (replied the ſon) I 'thought this was but ſuch a journey as I have 'often known you take, and that you were go-'ing no farther than *Holland*, on ſome buſineſs 'of her Grace's.'---'She thinks ſo indeed, (re-'turned the father) nor would I have her think 'otherwiſe as yet: but I do not deſign ever to ſee 'her face more. I am now, my ſon, arrived 'at the height of my wiſhes, being poſſeſſed of 'wealth, beyond my moſt ſanguine hopes. For 'you muſt know, that having gained the con-'fidence of this woman, by many ſervices, I at 'length ſuggeſted it to her, that the beſt way 'for her to make the moſt profit of the great 'wealth ſhe has amaſſed, would be to ſend 'it to *Holland*, by ſome truſty perſon, who 'ſhould bring it over again from thence, to 'ſave appearances, and ſubſcribe it here, in 'ſome fictitious name, to the ſupplies given for 'the defence of *Germany*, now that her's, and 'the intrigues of ſome other great perſons, had 'baffled the ſchemes of œconomy, which the 'managers had attempted in vain to eſtabliſh, 'and obliged them to come into our own terms. '--- She took the hint, for it was a moſt plau-'ſible one, and immediately inſiſted that I ſhould 'negociate the affair for her, giving me one 'hundred thouſand pounds for that purpoſe.

'This was what I wanted, and had been al-'ways ſcheming for, having ever remitted my 'money, as faſt as I could make any, into *Hol-'land*, that I might be able to ſeize ſuch an 'happy opportunity as this, at a moment's 'warning.' ---'*But you cannot think, father, of 'ſtaying in* HOLLAND. *You will be immediately purſued*

'*purſued thither.*'--- 'In *Holland* fool! no, nor 'in the ſmoak of *Europe* at all! I deſign to ſet 'out for *Africa*, without a moment's loſs; and 'hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that 'of any Chriſtian power, before ſhe can ſuſpect 'any thing of my flight. And it will heighten 'the pleaſure of my ſucceſs, to think, that while 'I am ſailing to a land of circumciſion, ſhe will 'ſit in anxious expectation of my return.'

'*But, father, is not it injuſtice to deceive her 'confidence, and rob her of ſo great a ſum of 'money?*

'Injuſtice, fool! injuſtice to a chriſtian! Say 'ſuch another word and I diſcard you, diſclaim 'you for ever! thy converſe with theſe *Gentiles* 'has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with 'them; what do we ſerve them; what do we 'bear their abominations, their inſults for, but 'to make our own advantage of them? Fools! 'vain preſumptuous fools! to imagine that any 'benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them; 'or change the innate hatred of our ſouls, to a 'ſect, that has been the cauſe of our diſperſion 'and ruin. But to ſilence thy weak ſcruples 'about injuſtice, with a word, have I not the 'authority of our holy Scripture, the example 'of our great prophet *Moſes* himſelf, for what I 'do, who borrowed the wealth of the *Egyptians* 'without a deſign of ever returning them, to pay 'the children of *Iſrael*, for the labours they had 'been put to by their oppreſſors, and enrich them 'when they ſhould arrive at the land of pro- 'miſe?---And is not this my caſe? have I not 'laboured hourly for this Gentile woman with- 'out payment! Did ſhe not join to defraud our

'people

'people of a greater ſum than this, to which 'my mite was added too, under the pretence of 'procuring us a ſettlement! and did ſhe not 'refuſe to return it, when the attempt failed of 'ſucceſs. What then is this, but a juſt retali-'ation? a fulfilling of our law, that ſays, *An 'eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth?* And do 'I not want her wealth to make my ſettlement 'happy, in the land of my fore-fathers?'--- The ſon had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father, to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments ſo concluſive. By this time the wind and tide ſerved for us; we arrived in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except I ſhould take notice to you of the ſordid hypocriſy of my maſter as ſuch, who, not to violate the cuſtoms of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his paſſage without expence.

CHAP. XVII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political Converſation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great diſtreſs.*

AS ſoon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my maſter ſent his ſon to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himſelf for a moment, to ſpeak to one of the principal members of the ſtates.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew, but entering directly upon buſineſs, 'My friend *Aminadab*, (ſaid his *mightineſs*) 'I am

'I am glad to ſee you; I hope you have brought 'us good news; and that there is a ſtop put to 'the inſolence of thoſe *Engliſh* pirates, who, in 'a manner, block up our ports, and have al-'moſt ruined our trade.'

'Really, my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied my 'maſter) I am ſorry that I cannot give you any 'ſatisfactory account of that affair. For ſuch is 'the perverſeneſs of the people in power there 'at preſent, that they will not liſten to any ar-'guments.'---'*Will they not take money?*'--- 'No, indeed; nor does the boldeſt of us all 'know how to offer it with ſafety, it was re-'jected with ſuch indignant rage the laſt time; 'though in truth the offer was a tempting one. 'I have ſeen the day, and that not very long 'ſince, when half the ſum would have done 'twice as much. But matters are moſt ſtrangely 'altered of late. They have got a manager, 'who neither drinks, nor games, keeps running 'horſes, nor whores, nor lives above his private 'fortune, and therefore has not ſuch preſſing de-'mands for money, as uſed to make our negoci-'ations go on ſo ſmoothly with others former-'ly.'

'*Death what ſhall we do? Is the whole court 'corrupted by this example? are they all infected 'with ſuch a ſtrange madneſs?*'

'No, it is not gone ſo far as that yet; and it 'is to be hoped, that the example of a few will 'not be able to do ſo much; and that when the 'novelty of this humour wears off a little, it 'will go out of faſhion inſenſibly, and things 'return to their old courſe. This is ſuppoſing 'the worſt, that the engines, now at work to 'overturn this new *ſet*, ſhould miſcarry.'

'*But*

'*But what muſt we do in the mean time? We ſhall be ruined before that may happen! we muſt declare war, and do ourſelves juſtice.*'

'But may not the remedy there be worſe than the diſeaſe? Are your affairs in ſuch a condition as to entitle you to take ſuch a ſtep? Conſider what a mighty naval force they have at this time! conſider how you will be able to reſiſt it.'

'*That is the thing, the only thing that has kept us quiet ſo long! But ſomething muſt be done; another* AMBOYNA *affair, or ſome ſuch ſtroke, muſt bring us ſatisfaction, and revenge too.*'

'Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: this is no time for ſuch ſtrokes; nor are the preſent governors ſuch people as thoſe, who ſuffered them ſo tamely: they will be apt to return the ſtroke, in a manner that may be attended with conſequences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate thoſe haughty Iſlanders, as much as you; except ſome few particulars, the ſenſe of the whole nation has ever been againſt us; nor would they ſuffer us among them now, but that we have availed ourſelves ſo well of the favour of thoſe few, as to get the command of almoſt all the money in the kingdom into our own hands, ſo that now they dare not provoke us too far; though I own I do ſuſpect that the deſign of the preſent rulers, is to get out of our power as ſoon as this war is over, if our old friends do not counteract their deſigns.'

'*But all this time this talking ſignifies nothing to our affairs; what do they ſay to them? What reaſons do they give for encouraging theſe outrages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of juſtice?*'

'In

'In truth, my friend, a great many, that are 'more juſt than agreeable; more eaſily exclaim-'ed againſt than refuted. In anſwer to your 'alledging the faith of treaties, they inſiſt that 'they ſtrictly obſerve the ſenſe and ſpirit of them, 'while you only cavil about the words, it being 'abſurd to think that any nation ſhould bind up 'its own hands, in the manner you pretend; or 'even if that was the meaning of the treaty, at 'the time when it was made, that your abuſe of 'the indulgence given by it, makes it neceſſary 'to retract it now: and they expreſs the moſt 'indignant ſurprize at your inſiſting ſo ſtrongly 'upon one article, which at beſt is but doubtful, 'and would be in itſelf abſurd, in the ſenſe you 'wreſt it to, while you break through ſo many, 'the meaning of which you do not even pretend 'to diſpute.'

'*Then we will diſpute no longer about them*; *we 'will enforce their obſervation, by the ſame methods 'that originally obtained them.*'---'Aye, if that 'could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you; 'I am afraid thoſe means are out of your power; 'you were then really *mighty ſtates*, reſpectable 'for your power, and dreadful for your valour: 'but the caſe is now altered, I need not ſay how.'

'*Ingrateful* ENGLISH! *to forget how we reſ-'cued them from popery and ſlavery, but the other 'day*; *had it not been for us they would, at beſt, 'have been but ſlaves to* FRANCE.'

'The very charge they make againſt you, 'who, they ſay, could never have reſiſted the 'power of *Spain*, or eſtabliſhed your liberties, 'if their queen *Elizabeth* had not hearkened to 'the cries of *your poor, diſtreſſed ſtates*. As for

'the

'the affair you mention, though they do not 'deny the benefit, they take off from the obli-'gation, by attributing it to ſelf-intereſted mo-'tives, as they ſay, you were convinced that if 'any thing happened to them, you muſt ſink 'of courſe: beſide, that you have been amply 'paid for this, by the immenſe expence of blood 'and treaſure with which they eſtabliſhed your 'barrier, in the late wars, which they evidently 'entered into on your accounts, to the neglect 'of their own intereſt.

'In a word, my friend, there is ſo much truth 'in what they ſay, that I would not adviſe you to 'inſiſt upon theſe points any more.'--'*Confound 'the points! and the memories that rip them up ſo! 'What ſhall we do? I myſelf loſt a ſhip laſt week, 'worth fifty thouſand ducats; though all the pre-'cautions poſſible were taken; as ſending her pa-'pers by another ſhip, ſupplying her with falſe bills 'of lading, falſe clearances, falſe conſignments; 'in ſhort, every thing that human art could deviſe.*'

'And I know ſhe was as well ſworn for to pre-'vent her being condemned, as human con-'ſcience could ſwear; but nothing could elude 'the captors, or deceive or influence the judges; 'but was ſhe not enſured?'

'*Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by en-'ſuring, except the ſhips are to be caſt away: O 'my ſhip! my ſhip! I will have war.*'---'And 'then all your ſhips go at once.'---'*I am diſ-'tracted! what ſhall we do?*'

'My friend, the beſt, the only advice I can 'give you, is to put a ſtop to this trade, and 'open your eyes to your true intereſt. I hate 'the *Engliſh* as much as you poſſibly can; but 'that ſhould not make me ruin myſelf to be re-

'venged

'venged on them: they are your only natural 'allies; they firſt delivered, they ſtill ſuſtain 'you, nor can you ſupport the very name of an 'independant ſtate without them. Provoke them 'not, therefore, too far; I wonder how they 'have borne ſo much already; preſerve a fair 'neutrality; they deſpiſe your aſſiſtance, and de-'ſire no more: nor by your avarice force them 'to meaſures, that muſt end in your ruin. If 'you break with them, whom will you apply to? 'The *French* have given you many proofs, that 'they wait only for an opportunity to enſlave 'you: *Spain* has at length learned its own inte-'reſt, and will not break with the only power, 'whoſe friendſhip can be of real ſervice to it: 'and this very war gives a ſufficient demonſtra-'tion of *Auſtrian* faith and gratitude.

'This is the obvious ſituation of things, and 'muſt ſtrike a perſon at the firſt view: but a mo-'ment's thought will ſhew them, even in a 'ſtronger light. For to grant that *France* and '*Auſtria* both may be ſincere in their profeſſions 'to you; does not reaſon ſhew you the impru-'dence of truſting to promiſes, which it is more 'than probable they will not be able to perform. 'For if you will but diveſt yourſelf of paſſion 'and prejudice for a moment, you will ſee that 'the meaſures entered upon, and the means uſed 'to carry them on, by the *Engliſh* at this time, 'muſt, in all human appearance, diſappoint the 'ſchemes of their enemies, and retort upon their 'own heads, the ruin they meditated for others. 'Indeed the proſpect is ſuch, that it is impoſſible 'to ſay where things will end: every interior 'fund is exhauſted; every external reſource cut 'off; their own trade is abſolutely ruined; the

'trea-

'treaſures of *Spain*, which ſupplied them in their 'laſt wars, are no longer at their command; ſo 'that I can foreſee nothing leſs than their be-'coming bankrupts, not only to themſelves, but 'alſo to every foreign ſtate, and individual, whoſe 'avarice of preſent gain has made them ſupply 'their wants.

'Nor is this diſtreſs the effect of chance, or of 'an unfortunate campaign, which the ſucceſs of 'another, or ſome lucky hit, may reſtore. It is 'the natural conſequence of a ſyſtem of mea-'ſures, plan'd with judgment, and proſecuted 'with vigour, by a miniſter who will not fail to 'improve it to the moſt ſolid advantage. And 'this I ſay, not ſolely from my own opinion. 'You know I have had connections with per-'ſons able to give me the beſt information, by 'the aſſiſtance of which I have traced the pro-'greſs of theſe affairs with aſtoniſhment: and 'therefore, as *England* has thus at length ſhewn 'a ſuperiority in council, the uſual reſource of 'patching up a good peace, at the end of an 'unſucceſsful war, ſeems alſo to be precluded 'from them.

'As for the houſe of *Auſtria*, it has ever been 'a dead weight upon its friends, though its infa-'tuated ingratitude to *England*, which had been 'in a manner its ſole ſupport, for near a century, 'will, probably, prevent any other ſtate from 'undertaking ſuch a burthen, ſo that it muſt 'ſink back, into its original obſcurity and bar-'bariſm.

'Thus you ſee, my friend, that depending 'upon *France* is leaning on a broken reed, and 'truſting to *Auſtria*, going for ſhelter under a 'falling wall: what then can you do if the

'*Engliſh* ſhould take offence at your behaviour, 'and exert that power which is in their hands, 'to puniſh your avaricious partiality to their 'enemies?

'Your power is, in every inſtance, contemp-'tible; your navy is gone abſolutely to decay; 'your land forces are filled with old men and 'children; your officers, who might have ſerved 'you, have been obliged to enter into other ſer-'vices for bread, to make room for ignorant, 'indolent, puſillanimous burghers, who barter 'their votes for ſuch a ſhare of the ſpoils of the 'publick. Your finances are in the loweſt ſtate 'of embarraſſment; your publick ſpirit, your 'valour, your virtue, all ſwallowed up by ſel-'fiſhneſs, and ſordid love of gain; every thing 'in the ſituation that ſeems to invite ruin, if it 'is not ſpeedily prevented; and that can poſ-'ſibly be done no other way, than as I have 'mentioned; for as I have ſaid, and muſt again 'repeat, things are now on a footing there, that 'you do not ſeem to be properly aware of. The 'people are ſenſible of their own ſtrength; their 'governors exert it properly, and there is a mu-'tual confidence between them, that in a man-'ner enſures ſucceſs to their attempts. Conſider 'this fair, this friendly repreſentation of real 'facts, and you will ſoon ſee the improbability 'of their bearing with you any longer; or ſuf-'fering you to defeat the end of their military 'efforts, by carrying on the trade of their ene-'mies, and ſo enabling them to continue the 'war.'

'*Is it come to this? Are the friends on whom we 'depended moſt turned againſt us? Are you an 'advocate for our enemies, and would perſwade*

'*us*

'*us to give up the moſt advantageous branch of* '*trade we have!*'

'Why will you let your paſſion blind you 'thus? I have told you before, and I repeat it 'again, that of all chriſtians I hate the *Engliſh* 'moſt, becauſe they reſemble us leaſt; as I love 'the *Dutch* moſt, as you come neareſt to our-'ſelves, both in practice and profeſſion. But '*my* paſſions never blind *me!* and therefore I 'ſpeak the dictates of reaſon; I plead not for 'them, nor will I flatter you.'

'*Notwithſtanding all their boaſted power, we* '*have one ſtroke left to humble them*; *and we will* '*make it directly*; *we will draw all our money* '*out of their funds.*'

'Will you ſo? at a third part loſs? O, *Moſes!* 'what fools are thoſe chriſtians? Do you not 'ſee that even this ſtroke, as you call it, is 'guarded againſt? that apprehenſive of ſuch an 'attempt, they have lowered the particular funds, 'in which your money chiefly lies, ſo far, that 'the loſs of ſelling out now would be intoler-'able. And whoſe is this money which you 'would draw out? the property of private peo-'ple: abſurd thought! if it was the money of 'the publick, it would not be ſtrange to ſee it 'ſacrificed to private intereſt, but there is no 'inſtance in all your ſtory of private property 'being given up voluntarily for the redreſs of 'publick wrongs.

'Friend *Hogan*, I am in haſte; my affairs 'call me elſewhere; when I ſhall ſee you again 'is uncertain; but my regard would not permit 'me to miſs this opportunity of giving you my 'advice, which I know to be of importance to 'you. I can no longer undertake your affairs in

'*London*; nor would I have another amuſe you, 'with hopes that muſt deceive you in the end: 'while it was in my power to ſerve you I did; I 'abuſed their confidence; I betrayed their ſecrets 'to you: but I can do it no longer; nor can 'any other to effect. Meaſures, as well as men, 'are changed. -------- Adieu.'

With theſe words my maſter went to ſeek his ſon, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the higheſt diſtraction, between the oppoſite impulſes of the ſtrongeſt paſſions that could agitate his ſoul, avarice and fear.

CHAP. XVIII.

AMINADAB *bids adieu to her Grace, and ſails with his ſon for* AFRICA. CHRYSAL *remains with a* DUTCH *banker. The principles and conſcience of a good* DUTCHMAN. CHRYSAL *is ſent into* GERMANY. *His opinion of the* DUTCH.

THE young *Iſraelite* met his father punctually, and gave him ſuch an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* bleſſed the God of his fathers, and to compleat the fulneſs of his harveſt with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of ſilver*, as much coined gold and ſilver as he could, and then going with his ſon to the ſea ſide, they embarked for their native

native country, in all the exultation of ſucceſsful villainy.

But I went not with them; my *Britiſh* ſhape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my maſter left *me* with his banker, in exchange for the more faſhionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there. --- My *Hebrew* maſter had ſcarce left the banker, into whoſe hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgick* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghaſt at the news he had received from him, and ſomething elſe, which had come to his knowledge ſince.

'O, *Mynheer!* (ſaid he) we are all blown up 'and undone! the flood is pouring in upon us.' --- 'What is the matter now, *Mynheer*, (replied 'the banker) that throws you into this ſtrange 'conſternation? the worms have not deſtroyed 'the dams? nor an earthquake ſwallowed up the 'Spice Iſlands?'

'*Worſe, worſe if poſſible, than even theſe!* '*Thoſe ſtubborn, proud, ſelf-ſufficient* ENGLISH '*have refuſed to releaſe our ſhips that were taken* '*carrying ammunition and proviſions to their ene-* '*mies, ſo that we are like not only to loſe thoſe ſhips,* '*but alſo the advantage of the trade for the future.* '*What can be done, to divert this blow?*'---'Really, '*Mynheer*, I cannot tell; the caſe is bad enough 'to be ſure; but it is no more than was to be 'expected; it was not to be thought that they 'ſhould always remain ſuch paſſive fools, as 'tamely to look on, while we ſupplied their ene-'mies with neceſſaries to carry on the war, 'againſt them, without endeavouring to put a 'ſtop to us.'

'*Death! I am almoſt mad to hear you talk*
'*thus! but ſay what you will, my* PROVINCE *ſhall*
'*never bear it! Why, I have received advice this*
'*minute, that our ſhips which were freighted*
'*for their enemies will be condemned*; *and that*
'*they are as little moved at our menaces, as they*
'*were at our intreaties. If this continues, we*
'*ſhall not have a ſhip left in the* TEXEL.'

'Nay, mine ſhall eſcape, I am reſolved.'---
---'*What will* YOU *do to ſave them?*'--------
'Not run them into the danger, *Mynheer.*'---
'*How, give up the trade?*' ---'Moſt certainly;
'ſince it cannot be carried on with ſafety any
'longer; and glad that I have come off ſo well.'
---'*I do not underſtand you!*'---'You are too
'warm, *Mynheer*; too ſanguine in the purſuit
'of your projects; while the ſurprize or fright
'of the late managers in *England*, gave me rea-
'ſon to think, that they would not venture to
'interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade, in
'this way, as any other: but, as ſoon as I ſaw
'the people recover their ſenſes, and the reins
'put into other hands, I made a timely retreat
'with what I had acquired.'---'*And what do*
'*you intend to do now?*'---'Keep fair with thoſe
'whom I can get nothing by breaking with,
'and throw my buſineſs into another channel;
'by which management I have already ſuc-
'ceeded ſo far, that I have got the *Britiſh* re-
'mittances to the parties engaged in the preſent
'war.'---'*Why, there may be ſomething in this*;
'*and if one ſcheme fails, I believe I will even fol-*
'*low your example.*'---'And pray what is that,
'*Mynheer?*'---'*No more than the old cry of*
'*pyracy*; *but this is ſo laid that it can hardly fail*
'*of ſucceſs: we have bribed the captain of an Eng-*
'*liſh*

'liſh privateer to rifle a ſhip, that we prepare 'properly for the purpoſe, and then to come into 'the way of one of our men of war, which is to 'take him and bring him in, where he is to 'inſult the government, and vindicate his outrages 'on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, *Mynheer*, what can you propoſe 'from all this, beſide having the fooliſh villain 'hanged?'

'Why the Engliſh, in deteſtation of ſuch vil-'lainy, will give up the point of ſearching our 'ſhips, when they ſee their authority abuſed in 'ſuch a manner, and ſo we ſhall gain our end that 'way; or if they do not, our own people will be 'ſo enraged at the inſult and injuſtice (as they will 'believe) of their proceeding, that they will im-'mediately declare war againſt them; and ſo we 'ſhall obtain it the other. The pyrate, when he 'has ſerved our turn, we are to let eſcape; and 'it will be no great loſs to the world if half a 'ſcore of his crew are hanged.'

'A very juſt and publick-ſpirited ſcheme in-'deed! to hang wretches for a crime you hire 'them to commit, and engage your country 'in a war that muſt be its ruin, to ſupport your 'pretenſions to an unjuſtifiable trade.

'*Mynheer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as 'well as you, and attached to my intereſt, as 'every Dutchman is; but that is, when *my* in-'tereſt is not deſtructive of itſelf in the end, as 'I muſt tell you, I think your preſent ſcheme is, 'in which I will be no farther concerned, than to 'try to prevent the evil conſequences of it to the 'ſtate: the reſt may lie upon your own head.

'Any thing in the way of trade, my con-'ſcience complies with without ſcruple; I can

'take every oath that every officer of the cuſtoms 'in *Europe* can impoſe, and not think myſelf 'bound by any of them, farther than they agree 'with my intereſt; I can ſupply the enemies of 'my country with arms, to fight againſt our-'ſelves, provided they pay a price extraordi-'nary, that will defray my taxes toward the 'ſupport of the war; I can receive circumci-'ſion, ſtroke down my beard, and ſwear by '*Mahomet*, to avoid a tax at *Smyrna*; I can 'trample upon the croſs, deny *Chriſt*, and call 'myſelf a *Dutchman*, to obtain leave to trade in '*Japan*; but I will not cut the dykes to drown 'a rat at home.

'I am not at leiſure to ſay more on this ſub-'ject, as I am this minute going to remit a ſub-'ſidy to one of the *German* princes, whom *Eng-'land* keeps in pay, to fight for their own pre-'ſervation, from the ſame principles, that it has 'long fought our battles, and would again, if 'we did not provoke it too far. And when this 'is done, I am to meet the *French* ambaſſador 'to ſettle terms with him, for remitting the 'money, that is to pay the army, which fights 'againſt the allies of *England*. So that you ſee 'I am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, 'unnatural to the cool temper of our country, 'will let you open your eyes to your true in-'tereſt.'

Mynheer Van Hogan departed, rather ſilenced than ſatisfied, with the reaſoning of my maſter, who ſat down to negociate the *hire* of a prin-cipality, with as much unconcern, as he would that of a turnip field; and bought and ſold the inhabitants with as great indifference, as he would have bargained for a caſk of herrings;

in

in which ſervice, it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I muſt have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious, of my late maſter, I muſt own, there was ſomething ſo groſsly reprobate to every ſenſe of real virtue, even in him, that I was pleaſed to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general; where the very profeſſion of virtue was deſpiſed, their only pretenſion to it, being the abſence of one vice, hypocriſy, which they rejected, as an unneceſſary incumbrance, and acted their groſſeſt enormities, without reſerve, or appearance of ſhame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the ſovereign actors gave a dignity to the ſcenes; and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed, and loſt, in the confuſion of nations.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL's *remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected for ſuch paſſions.*

WHILE I was travelling to my deſtined maſter, I had frequent opportunities of ſeeing the fruits of military glory, in the miſery of the people, and deſolation of the countries through which I went.

Such ſcenes as theſe cannot be made known by deſcription to an inhabitant of this happy Iſland, whoſe ſituation defends it from the ſudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval ſtrength does from the more deliberate devaſtations of regular invaſion; and the excellency of its laws, from the yet ſeverer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happineſs, ſuch is the inſatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that not content with theſe bleſſings, you are ever complaining, ever graſping at more, till, in the end, you loſe the enjoyment of what you poſſeſs, inſenſible, that your ſevereſt wants would be abundance to millions, who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been ſaid, that there is a certain degree of madneſs requiſite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its firſt principle of ſelf preſervation, to ſlight the moſt terrifying dangers, and ſeek the moſt ſevere evils that interrupt its purſuit of an imaginary good.

The luſt of power, and the intoxication of glory, may ſeem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature, but madneſs alone can ſupport the maſs of mankind through it, who are inſenſible to theſe fantaſtick motives, or at leaſt cannot delude themſelves with the faineſt hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I ſaw many inſtances in my journey through the countries, that were the ſcene of the preſent war; but one more particularly that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats, early in our journey, made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on me, and deſerves relation moſt.--- There had been an obſtinate battle fought ſome time before between the parties then at war, in which the

loſs

loſs was ſo ſevere, and ſo equal on both ſides, that as ſoon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itſelf vanquiſhed, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's ſituation, they both claimed the victory, while neither thought proper to return to the charge to aſſert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the miſery of the unhappy wretches, who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful ſcene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as ſoon as the firſt terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved ſome of the inhabitants to go, and try to relieve as many of the deſerted ſufferers, as had not periſhed for want of more timely aſſiſtance, without diſtinction, or reſpect to any party.

Two of thoſe victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had ſince founded a friendſhip on their common calamity, having been ſupported by the ſame charity, and cured of their wounds in the ſame bed, were now ſtriving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcaſſes, carried like other worn-out inſtruments of the war, to their reſpective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water-ſide, where we had juſt taken boat, where they begged in the moſt moving terms to be admitted, but were abſolutely refuſed, till one of the paſſengers, an *Engliſh* gentleman, took compaſſion on their diſtreſs, and paid their fare.

We were all ſeated in the equality uſual in ſuch vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions

are

are thrown promiſcuouſly together, when the converſation happening to turn upon the war, which then reigned in moſt parts of Europe, and every one ſpeaking variouſly, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Engliſhman* chanced to ſay, that he thought ſuch a combination of the greateſt powers of Europe, as, at that time, laboured to oppreſs the king of *Bulgaria*, was, to diveſt it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politicks to the rule of reaſon and juſtice, the moſt injurious, and even baſe abuſe of power, that could be inſtanced in the chriſtian hiſtory; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his ſubjects to his cauſe, that is, really to their own cauſe, would riſe ſuperior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the ſtroke which they had perfidiouſly aimed at his ruin, to their diſhonour and confuſion.

The rage into which this reflection, ſo injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the paſſengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was ſo great that he could not ſuppreſs it, till the gentleman ſhould conclude; but interrupting him, without the leaſt reſpect to his perſonal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned, to have been admitted into the boat on his charity;' 'What do you mean, ſir, '(ſaid he) by ſaying that this war will end in the 'diſhonour of the king of *France?* Was not 'his motive for entering into it the moſt diſ-'intereſted and glorious? to ſupport the rights 'of ſovereignty, and bring vaſſals to a proper 'ſenſe of duty and obedience? And has not the 'ſucceſs been anſwerable to the greatneſs of his 'deſigns?

'deſigns? Have not his forces been every where 'victorious by land and ſea?'

The tone of voice with which theſe words were ſpoken drew the eyes of all preſent upon the ſpeaker, a little, old, withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and ſcarce ſeemed to have ſkin enough, not to ſay fleſh, to cover the remainder of his ſhattered bones, and keep them together. But his ſpirit ſupplied all theſe diſadvantages, and enabled him to raiſe himſelf upon his ſtumps, and caſt a look of the moſt ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to deſtroy whoever dared to diſpute his words.

But his triumph was not long; his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury, 'How, (ſaid he) the army of *France* ever victo-'rious over *Bulgaria!* what aſſurance can dictate 'ſuch a falſehood? Where have they obtained 'one victory? where have they eſcaped defeat, 'except when the ſuperiority of their numbers 'has exceeded all proportion! and even then their 'ſlain have generally equalled the whole amount 'of the forces, whom they fought with; what 'armies have they loſt already! how few of thoſe 'which remain will ever return to their native 'home, even in the wretched condition that you 'do?'

Theſe laſt words raiſed a general laugh at the perſon who ſpoke them, he being, if poſſible in a more maimed and helpleſs condition, than the one to whom they were addreſſed, having loſt both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and ſubmitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'I ſee, gentlemen (ſaid he) that you 'laugh at my mentioning the wretchedneſs of 'any

'any other living creature with contempt, who 'am ſuch a ſufferer myſelf! but what abſurdities 'will not paſſion hurry men into? and how could 'human patience bear to hear this *Frenchman* 'boaſt of the victories of his monarch, whoſe 'forces I myſelf have aſſiſted to rout, at every 'place where I have ever met them.'

'You rout the forces of my maſter! (replied 'the other) my maſter's forces would eat up all 'your maſter's ſubjects, for a breakfaſt.'---'I 'do not deny their number nor their appetites, '(returned the *Bulgarian)* they leave ſufficient 'evidence of both where-ever they go: cruelty and 'rapine lead forth their armies; famine and deſo-'lation mark their marches. Shake not your head 'at me, nor lift your hand, as you regard your 'life; elſe, loath as I am to make miſery ridicu-'lous, by a quarrel between two ſuch wretches as 'we are, though I have not an hand to ſtrike, 'with my foot will I ſpurn out your life, and tram-'ple on your carcaſs.'

'*Morblieu! compare the mighty* MONARQUE '*of* FRANCE *with a little* GERMAN *king.*'

'You miſtake me greatly; I never meant to 'compare them: the greatneſs of your monarch 'I do not deny, were it not abuſed to purpoſes 'that make it a diſhonour to *him*, and a misfor-'tune to his ſubjects; whereas our ſovereign is 'the father of his people, and never exerts his 'power, but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you muſt forgive my warmth; 'any thing againſt myſelf I can deſpiſe; but my 'king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear 'ſpoken of with diſreſpect, while I have a voice 'left to aſſert his cauſe: I have fought for him; 'I have fought with him: for *he* does not ſit riot-

'ing

'ing in the debaucheries of a court, while his 'ſubjects are encountering hardſhips and dangers 'to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels 'are the quarrels of his people; and he fights 'their battles with them; and the only regret I 'feel for the loſs of my limbs is, that I can em-'ploy them no longer in his ſervice, for which I 'would lay down my life this minute with joy, 'could it gain him the leaſt advantage, or was 'neceſſary to prove my attachment to him.

'But ſince I can no longer have the happineſs 'of being of ſervice to him, all I have now to do 'is, to retire to my native country, where his pa-'ternal care has made ſuch a proviſion for my 'wants, that I ſhall wear out my days in content, 'without ever having my prayers for his welfare, 'and ſucceſs, diſturbed by one repining wiſh, one 'juſt complaint.

'But aſk this vain glorious knight errant if he 'can ſay ſo? Did he fight for the preſervation of 'his family, his country, and his religion, as I 'did? Did he fight under the conduct of his ſo-'vereign, who perſonally provided for the neceſ-'ſities, the comforts of his men, as I did? Is he 'ſure of a peaceful retreat at home, ſafe from the 'additional diſtreſs of want, as I am?

'Not at all; he fought for he knew not what, 'he knew not whom. At a diſtance from his 'king, who was inſenſible of his dangers, and 'revelled in delicacies, while his ſubjects, the 'victims of his ambition, were deſtitute of the 'common, indiſpenſible neceſſaries of nature; nor 'has he any other hope of prolonging his miſe-'rable days when he gets home, but the wretch's 'laſt reſource of begging, in a country ſo exhauſt-'ed by the vain tyranny of his maſter, that cha-

'rity

'rity is almoſt an ineffectual virtue, for want of 'means for its exertion.'---All preſent were ſtruck with the force with which the ſoldier delivered his ſentiments, nor did his antagoniſt attempt any reply; but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himſelf, ſaying, with a ſneer, 'that ſince his feet were ſo good, he might here-'after uſe them inſtead of hands, for he would 'feed him no longer.'

This poor ſpirited ſarcaſm was received by the perſon to whom it was applied, with a ſmile of diſdain, though it raiſed the idle laughter of the greater part preſent. But the *Engliſhman* received it in another manner, for drawing out his purſe, he took twenty ducats, and putting them himſelf into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*; 'Accept of 'theſe, my brother ſoldier, (ſaid he) to make your 'journey into your native country more conveni-'ent, where you cannot meet more tender regard 'from your ſovereign and country, than your ſen-'ſible attachment to them merits. As far as I 'ſhall go your way I will take care of you myſelf, 'and that will defray the expence of the reſt of 'your journey with comfort.'

CHAP. XX.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his deſtined maſter.*

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to expreſs his gratitude for this charity, the manner of preſenting which doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that ſtole in ſilence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his be-

nefactor,

nefactor, ſpoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every perſon preſent ſo much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as he recovered utterance, 'Such 'ſaid he) is the noble benevolence that diſtinguiſhes the ſons of liberty! ſuch the generoſity of heart, that always extends the ready hand of a *Britain*, with relief to the diſtreſſed. 'May heaven preſerve to your happy nation 'the bleſſings which enable it to exert its virtues, 'to make them a bleſſing to all who want their 'aſſiſtance. And though envy may malign, and 'ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence finds its reward in its own exertion, in 'the certainty of a retribution from thoſe treaſures which never fail.'

The turn of this ſoldier's diſcourſe, and particularly the laſt part of it, ſeemed ſo much above his preſent appearance, that it raiſed a curioſity in his benefactor to aſk him, 'If he had been 'bred to arms, or how long he had profeſſed 'the military life, and in what ſtation.'

'O, ſir, (replied he with a ſigh, that ſeemed to 'tear his heart) your queſtion recalls to my memory, ſcenes that I would willingly forget for 'ever, and obliges me to relate ſuch things as 'would draw tears from *Tartars*, Pandours, or 'the crueller ſoldiers of the king of *France*.----- 'I was not bred to arms, nor have I followed 'the military profeſſion long, or in in any other 'rank than that which rage and deſpair firſt 'placed me in, when I offered myſelf to my 'ſovereign to repel the invaders, and revenge 'the deſolation of my bleeding country. My 'unhappy ſtory is no more than this.

'I am

'I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the ſon of a mi-
'niſter of the goſpel, who obſerving a deſire of
'knowledge in my youth, encouraged and im-
'proved it, by his own precepts and example,
'and led my ſtudious mind through the ſubli-
'meſt paths of ſcience.

'As ſoon as he ſaw my reſolutions ſufficiently
'eſtabliſhed to be proof againſt the levity of
'youth, and temptations of ſenſe, he yielded to
'my entreaties, and I was admitted into the
'ſacred order of which he was a member, and
'made the perfection of human wiſdom, the
'practice of piety and virtue under the direction
'of the divine word, the buſineſs of my happy
'life. Happy indeed then! but now the recol-
'lection of that happineſs aggravates my pre-
'ſent miſery, in the irrecoverable loſs of it, al-
'moſt to deſpair.

'As the religion of the benign redeemer of
'mankind does not enjoin impoſſibilities, by re-
'quiring us to eradicate paſſions, which are the
'eſſence of our nature, and whoſe indulgence,
'under the direction of reaſon and virtue, is the
'end of our creation, and the baſis of our being,
'and fulfills the firſt divine command, by con-
'tinuing our ſpecies, and encreaſing the number
'of his adorers, I obeyed the impulſe of virtuous
'love, and married the daughter of a neigh-
'bouring divine, who compleated to me, as I
'vainly thought, the ſum of human happineſs,
'by a numerous offſpring, which grew up on
'the knees of their aged grandſire, my father;
'now become too feeble for the active duties,
'while my labours ſupplied the neceſſaries of life
'to my contented family, in which I thus ſtood
'the happy center of filial and paternal love.

'In

'In this bliſsful ſtate did I advance toward 'heaven, when envy of his glory, and fear of 'his virtues brought this deſtructive war upon 'the dominions of our ſovereign. O, my father! 'my children! my wife! in one day did I loſe 'you all. Theſe eyes beheld my habitation re-'duced to aſhes, my children maſſacred in the 'wantonneſs of cruelty, in deſpight of the prayers 'of my aged father, whoſe ſnow-white hairs, 'whoſe whole appearance would have ſtruck 'the ruthleſs hearts of the ancient heathen *Gauls* 'with reverence, in deſpight of the cries of my 'beauteous wife, who both begged to draw their 'fury on themſelves, from the defenceleſs inno-'cents; but all in vain; the murderers, deaf 'to their cries and intreaties, inſenſible to the 'beauty of the babes, who ſtood ſmiling at the 'ſwords that hung over their heads, firſt but-'chered them as in ſport, then abuſed the perſon 'of my wife to death, and mangled my father's 'breathleſs body, whoſe tender heart, the grief 'of ſuch a ſight had burſt, while *I* unhappier far 'than any, ſtood looking on bound to a tree, 'with my jaws diſtended with the head of a 'ſpear, and my cheeks cut open thus from ear 'to ear, a Bible being placed before me, and a '*French prieſt* ſtanding by, encouraging their 'cruelty, as meritorious againſt hereticks, and 'inſultingly bidding me, *preach now to my con-'gregation*, at the ſame time refuſing me the re-'leaſe of death, which I beſought by all the 'ſigns deſpair could ſuggeſt, and making them 'leave me naked, and whipped till my body 'was all one wound, to periſh by famine and 'grief.

'But

'But heaven had ordained otherwiſe for me; 'ſome of my neighbours who had eſcaped their 'fury, came, as ſoon as night favoured their 'fears, to learn our fate, and offer any aſſiſtance 'in their power. They unbound me; they bu-'ried the remains of my ſlaughtered family, and 'forced me from the grave, to their retreat in 'the woods, where they healed my wounds, and 'ſtrove to comfort my diſtreſs. But all their 'arguments would have been too weak to make 'me ſuffer life, had not a deſire of revenge taken 'poſſeſſion of my ſoul, and ſilenced every other 'thought.

'As ſoon as I had recovered ſtrength, I haſted 'to the army of my ſovereign, where I threw 'myſelf at his feet, and told him all my diſtreſs. 'He heard me with pity; he ſhed tears at my 'ſad ſtory, and raiſing me with his own hand, '*Be comforted, my brother* (ſaid the mighty mo-'narch to his meaneſt ſubject) *be comforted, the 'loſſes of the juſt will be repaid in heaven; there 'thy happy family expect thine arrival; there thy 'virtues will be rewarded, thy joys compleat; 'when the evils of this world, which endure but 'for a moment, ſhall be at an end. The horrors 'of war agree not with the innocence of your paſt 'life, or the humane tenderneſs of your diſpoſition, 'and would but aggravate your griefs, by the un-'happily unavoidable repetition of the like ſcenes of 'ruin. Retire therefore to my capital, where all 'comforts of life ſhall be provided for you, to alle-'viate your diſtreſs, while your prayers aſſiſt us in 'the day of battle.'

'I heard his words with reverence, but his 'virtue was too ſublime for my imitation. I 'fell again at his feet, and wringing my hands,

'O ſir,

'O ſir, (ſaid I) this goodneſs is too great for 'man; alas, I am unable to obey its dictates; 'my ſoul languiſhes for vengeance; O, bear 'with human infirmity, and permit me to fight 'under thy command. Heaven heard not my 'prayers, or it would have prevented my ruin; 'let me then have recourſe to other methods for 'redreſs; let me contribute my poor help to thy 'victories, to the deliverance of my country; 'I die this moment if my prayer is refuſed.'

'*Be then my companion in this juſt war*; (ſaid 'my ſovereign, raiſing me again) *and ſince thy 'ſacred function muſt not be diſgraced with any 'other rank, fight by my ſide, and lead me to ſuc-'ceſs.*'

'From that day have I followed his ſteps in 'the field of battle at an awful diſtance; and 'been witneſs to all the wonders of his conduct 'and valour; till in the late action a cannon 'ſhot took off both my arms, as I had the ho-'nour of holding my own horſe for him to 'mount, his having being killed under him as I 'fought by his ſide.

'He expreſſed concern at my misfortune, and 'commanded me to retire to his own tent; but 'an *Auſtrian* huſſar, the moment after, cut me 'down with his ſabre, though in the unpreme-'ditated inſtinct of ſelf-preſervation I had held 'up both my bleeding ſtumps to ward the 'blow.

'Here I lay among my fellow ſharers in the 'common calamity, in ſubmiſſive expectation of 'the ſtroke of fate, from the horſes feet, or the 'pillagers of the field. But heaven had other-'wiſe ordained; and after two days weltering

'in

'in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by 'charity, to the condition in which you ſee me, 'and am now ſtriving to go, and avail myſelf of 'my maſter's humane offer, which your benevo-'lence enables me to do with comfort.

'This fellow-ſufferer, whoſe arrogance firſt 'prompted me to ſpeak, has deen a ſharer with 'me alſo, in the charity which relieved us; 'where our common calamity created a kind of 'friendſhip between us, and our neceſſities ſug-'geſted it to us, to combine the remains of our 'limbs, for mutual aſſiſtance, he preparing our 'victuals, and feeding me, while I have carried, 'not only our poor baggage, but him alſo, upon 'my back.

'But that alliance is at an end; not becauſe 'the relief which you ſo generouſly have beſtow-'ed upon me, may ſeem to free me from the 'neceſſity of his aſſiſtance, for I muſt beg your 'leave to divide it with him, as half is ſufficient 'for me, but that my ſoul abhors the principles 'which firſt led him into this diſtreſs, and which 'even ſuch ſufferings cannot ſhew the impious 'abſurdity of; and diſclaims connection with 'the enemy of my gracious ſovereign, who 'would thus malign his glory, when he cannot 'deny, nor longer reſiſt the virtues, that have 'raiſed it.'

By this time we arrived at the place, where I was to be delivered to the miniſter of my deſtined maſter, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

How CHRYSAL *found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power. His cares for the augmentation, and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolutions to maintain the conſequence of his rank.*

WE found him buſied in reviewing ſome new levies, which he had juſt raiſed, to hire out to the beſt bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the juſtice of the cauſe, or conſidering any other motive or conſequence, than juſt the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteouſly allowed them a pittance to ſupport the lives ſo uſeful to him.

As ſoon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highneſs retired with his miniſter, who preſenting the bag in which *we* were, with a bent knee, 'The ſubſidy, may it pleaſe your 'moſt ſerene highneſs, from *England*,' (ſaid he.) —'*It is well*, (replied the ſovereign) *but upon 'what terms?*'—'The ſame your highneſs had 'laſt year.' —— *No more! they ſhall not have my 'men! I can have more elſewhere!* FRANCE *'offers better.*'——'Then I muſt return this mo-'ney, pleaſe your highneſs.'—'*Return it? no*; '*for what?*' —'If your highneſs does not like 'the terms, you will not keep the money, I pre-'ſume.' —— '*Fool, but I will! ſuch laws may 'bind you ſubject wretches, but ſovereign princes 'are*

'*are above them*; *laws are not made for us.*'---
'I humbly implore your highneſs's pardon for
'my ignorance; then you will give thoſe troops
'to FRANCE.'--- '*Yes, when* FRANCE *pays me*
'*for them.*' ---- 'But in the mean time, as ENG-
'LAND has already paid your highneſs, they
'will depend upon them, and conſequently ſuffer
'by the diſappointment.'--- '*Then let them prize*
'*my friendſhip properly another time*; *I am not*
'*obliged to ſupport kings upon their thrones for no-*
'*thing*; *I may invade as well as guard againſt in-*
'*vaſion. They ſhall know whom they dare offend.*

'Something has provoked your highneſs's
'wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance ſhould
'aggravate.'

'*I will teach the reſpect that's due to ſovereignty*;
'*I am not king of* ENGLAND, *curbed in my will,*
'*and limited in power*; *my ſubjects are my ſlaves*;
'*they dare not think of any other law, beſide my*
'*pleaſure. Death! can you think it! my miniſter*
'*at the court of* ENGLAND *writes me word, that*
'*a baſe plebeian merchant has had the aſſurance*
'*to demand payment for the goods he ſent me laſt*
'*year, for the ſupport and ſplendor of my court,*
'*and on its not being deducted from the ſubſidy, to*
'*refuſe ſupplying me this year, and even to threaten*
'*complaining to their parliament.*

'*Now judge you if a ſovereign prince whoſe forces*
'*are their ſecurity in time of danger, can brook*
'*ſuch inſolence*; *and to conclude the whole*; *What*
'*did the* ENGLISH *miniſter ſay, when my miniſter*
'*remonſtrated with him on this affair, but that*
'*by the laws of* ENGLAND *no man could be com-*
'*pelled to part with his property againſt his will,*
'*or hindered to complain, if he thought himſelf ag-*
'*grieved:*

'*grieved: and that the laws were ſacred, and muſt*
'*not be infringed. Think now if I can with honour*
'*keep an alliance with ſuch people, till I have re-*
'*ceived ſatisfaction: I, whoſe ſubjects have no*
'*property nor laws, but my will, to be treated in*
'*ſuch a manner, by a vile trader: it is not to be*
'*borne.*'

'I am very ſorry to hear of this affair, and
'particularly at this time, becauſe if your high-
'neſs ſhould break with the *Engliſh* now, when
'they think they want your men, they may be
'provoked never to deal with your highneſs for
'them another time, when they have no other
'occaſion for them, only to do your highneſs a
'ſervice.'

'*Why there may be ſomething in that, and there-*
'*fore, if they will ſend me the merchandize I want,*
'*and raiſe the ſubſidy, perhaps I may not refuſe*
'*them the ſuccours they deſire.*'

'How much does your highneſs require to
'have the ſubſidy raiſed?

'*I have not thought of that yet. But ſurely they*
'*cannot be ſo unreaſonable as to expect my men at*
'*the ſame rate, now in time of danger, as they*
'*had them in peace, when there was nothing at all*
'*for them to do, but they could work at their trades*
'*at home, and maintain themſelves without wear-*
'*ing out their uniform, or any other expence to*
'*me?*'---'That is very true; if your highneſs
'was not to conſider at the ſame time, that even
'then they paid you as much as if it was a time
'of war, and indeed more than any other nation
'will, or can pay you now; for as to the pro-
'miſes of *France*, they are not to be depended
'on at all, whereas *England* always pays well.'

'*I do not care! what I have gotten here I will keep, by way of repriſal, for the inſult offered to my honour; and if they will have my troops, they ſhall pay me over again for them: ſo ſay no more on that head.*'

'I ſubmit; but how will your highneſs ſubſiſt them at home in the mean time. There muſt be an immediate remittance made of ſome of this money to *Holland*, to buy proviſions, for your magazines are quite exhauſted, and the conſtant demand for men, to ſupply the troops you have agreed for, and recruit the loſſes they have ſuſtained in battle, have not left ſufficient to cultivate the land.'

'*Then let them ſtarve! I ſhall not expend a penny to ſupport them: Could not the women and children work? I wonder you ſhould dare to mention ſuch a thing. If I lay out this money, what is to ſupport the ſplendour of my court, ſince this* ENGLISHMAN *has refuſed to ſupply me?*

'I humbly beg your highneſs's pardon, but what anſwer am I to ſend to the *Engliſh*, who have demanded that the troops ſhould march directly?'

'*Why, that I am ſo enraged at the inſult offered to me, by that merchant, that I will not let a man of them ſtir till I have ſatisfaction, and a new ſubſidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, to make up the deficiencies in former years.*'

'Deficiencies? I do not underſtand your highneſs; the ſubſidies have been always regularly paid.'

'*Obey my commands! I ſay there have been deficiencies which I am not at leiſure to explain in this emergency, but I ſuppoſe my word will be taken for it.*'

'I fear

'I fear your highneſs does not attend to the 'change which has lately been in *England*. The 'people who might have taken ſuch an anſwer 'are now out of power; and their ſucceſſors are 'the very men who have always been againſt 'dealing with your highneſs, and may now take 'the advantage of this breach of faith, for ſuch 'I well know they will call it, to throw off your 'alliance for ever: for the people begin to ſee 'their own ſtrength, and their governors to 'exert it properly, and ſhew them that they 'want no foreign aſſiſtance. And as a proof of 'this, at this very time, when their enemies not 'only talk of invading them more confidently 'than ever, but alſo have gone ſo far as to make 'preparations for ſuch an attempt, ſo far from 'being diffident of their own ſtrength, or inti-'midated to call for help, they have actually 'ſent a powerful body of their troops abroad, 'and are carrying on the war with vigour and 'ſucceſs in every quarter of the world, ſatisfied 'that the inhabitants, who remain at home, are 'able to defend their country, and repel every 'attempt that may be made againſt it. And 'this change in their meaſures ſhould give a 'caution how the perſons who effected it are pro-'voked.'

'*I care not*; *I will make the experiment*; *but* '*do you draw up your diſpatches in ſuch a manner*, '*that we may have it in our power to explain them* '*to whatever ſenſe ſhall ſuit us beſt. In the mean* '*time we muſt keep up our appearance of treating* '*with* FRANCE, *to give a weight to our de-*'*ſigns.*'

The miniſter was prevented from replying by the entrance of the muſter-maſter, who had been

juſt making a ſurvey, and taking an account of every man *able to bear arms*, in his highneſs's territories.

'Well, (ſaid his highneſs) how do your muſ-'ters anſwer? ſhall I be able to enlarge the 'number of my troops this year?---'May it 'pleaſe your moſt ſerene highneſs, (replied the 'officer) here is the return, in which I have 'taken down every man from twelve to ſeventy, 'according to your commands.'---- '*And how do 'they anſwer? better than laſt year I hope; there 'muſt a great many boys have grown up ſince.*'---- 'The liſt indeed looks almoſt as full as uſual; 'but the late battles have ſo drained us of men to 'fill up the troops, that there are ſcarce any but 'boys left at home, and thoſe have been ſo badly 'fed of late that their ſize does not anſwer their 'years, and they look wretchedly beſide. So 'that upon the whole I fear your highneſs will 'find it very difficult to compleat the forces al-'ready eſtabliſhed, much more to raiſe any 'new.'

'*I muſt, I will raiſe them! Tell me not of dif-'ficulties! what I command ſhall be performed! 'If there are not men, the women ſhall put on the 'men's cloaths and go; I will not be ſhortened of 'my revenue: they ſhall fight themſelves, ſince they 'have not bred ſoldiers for me.*

'This, pleaſe your highneſs, is a liſt of the 'diſabled men, who are not able to ſupport 'themſelves by any kind of work, having loſt 'their limbs in the wars.'

'*Diſabled men? I thought I ordered you not to 'exchange them; they might have remained in the 'hands of the enemy; ſuch of them I mean as are 'not able to breed ſoldiers for me, and cultivate*

'*the*

'the lands; or, ſuch as were not priſoners might 'have been let periſh of their wounds; it would 'have been a mercy to them to ſhorten their mi-'ſery.'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs, I obſerved your 'orders, and left a number of ſuch wretches, 'unexchanged; but the enemy ſaw into my de-'ſign, and ſent them home to be rid of the 'trouble of them. And now they are crying 'for ſubſiſtence, and demand the arrears of their 'pay, which was ſtopped while they were pri-'ſoners. The others our ſurgeons took proper 'care of.'

'Inſolent ſlaves! demand pay, when they are 'no longer able to earn it! And ſubſiſtence too! 'they learned this impudence from their converſation 'with thoſe Engliſh! it is much they did not de-'mand roaſt beef and pudding too! --- Hang up 'half of them, the next word of the kind they dare 'to utter, to terrify the other half to ſtarve in 'quiet. And at your peril let me hear no more 'of them.

'As for the muſters I will have them compleated; 'man, woman, and child ſhall go! I will make my 'dominions a deſart, before I leſſen my conſequence 'among the ſovereign powers of Europe.

CHAP. XXII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequentes of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for Bacon.*

HIS highneſs had juſt declared this magnanimous reſolution, when the ſteward of his houſhold entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was ſupplied, had refuſed to ſend him any more proviſions till their bills were paid, as they had heard that he was to receive no more ſubſidies from *England*; and there was ſcarce enough to make out dinner, for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princeſſes of the various branches of his highneſs's moſt illuſtrious houſe having come to pay him a viſit of congratulation upon the birth of the moſt ſerene prince his ſon and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's fleſh and veniſon, nor even a ſufficient quantity of theſe, the miſery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his foreſts, to ſave themſelves and their families from periſhing by famine.

His highneſs had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous inſult upon his ſovereign authority and pleaſure, but then burſting into a rage, '*Hunt in my foreſts!* (ſaid he) *Audacious*
'*ſlaves!*

'*ſlaves! dearly ſhall they pay for their preſump-*
'*tion! Order my troops to march that way direct-*
'*ly! I'll lay the country waſte!*' — 'Pleaſe your
'highneſs (replied the ſteward) that will not coſt
'you the trouble of marching your troops: the
'country is a deſart already.'

'*Who told you that they have been guilty of this*
'*inſolence? you ſhould have ſeized the author of*
'*the report, for not apprehending the criminals.*'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs they took one
'wretch in the very fact, and have brought him
'here, to receive the ſentence of your pleaſure;
'and the ſtag with him alive, which he found
'in a pit, and had borrowed a gun to ſhoot.
'He pleaded hunger, and the cries of a ſtarving
'family of grand-children, for he is an old man,
'and his three ſons have been killed in the wars;
'but, though I own he moved me, I did not
'preſume to let him go.'

'*It is well you did not, or you ſhould have ſuf-*
'*fered in his ſtead. Go, ſtrip him naked, bind*
'*him on that ſtag, and then let him looſe with him*
'*upon his back into the woods, proclaiming, that*
'*no one, upon pain of death, preſume to give him*
'*the leaſt relief: he ſhall have hunting*
'*enough.*'

'But what will your highneſs have me do
'about proviſions for the entertainment of the
'princes? I believe they deſign a long viſit, for
'they have brought all the young princes and
'princeſſes of their illuſtrious families with
'them.'

'*I care not! I am not to be diſturbed on ſuch*
'*trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on*
'*my reſolution: let them go home again.*'

'Not faſting, I preſume; for they have already 'ſignified ſome of them, that they have come 'without their breakfaſts, by calling for refreſh-'ment the moment they arrived; and indeed I 'fear the principal motive of this viſit of their 'highneſſes was want of any thing to eat at 'home.'

'*Confuſion! what can I do? Here, take this 'money, and ſend for victuals for them.*'

The ſight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable ſurprize to the ſteward, who had not heard of the arrival of the ſubſidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleaſure, and I felt no leſs in being delivered from this ſcene of ſovereignty, of which I was ſincerely ſick; though by the change, I fell from being the price of armies to the domeſtick office of going to market for a morſel of bread, from the glory of cauſing the ſlaughter of thouſands, to the virtue of ſupporting the lives of a few.

The ſteward, as ſoon as he withdrew from the preſence of his highneſs, called the other officers of the houſhold together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their maſter's breaking with *England*, ſo that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad tidings, by ſhewing them the gold.

The pleaſing ſight raiſed univerſal joy; they licked their lips, feaſted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds, and keen appetites, while the ſteward not caring to truſt a commiſſion of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to waſh down a mouldy cruſt with

with a draught of ſour wine, and then went to market for them himſelf.

The appearance of things changed as ſoon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highneſs, and entered into the little territories of a free ſtate. Plenty was the reward of induſtry, and content ſupplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highneſs's miniſter had preſſing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the ſeveral dealers in proviſions, and ordering a comfortable ſupply on the credit of our appearance, returned with the greateſt diſpatch, to the diſcharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew, for bacon and ſauſages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the beſt of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themſelves.

CHAP. XXIII.

Compariſon between two dealers in fleſh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

I Now entered into a ſervice, the moſt diametrically oppoſite of any in nature to my laſt; my preſent maſter denying himſelf the very neceſſaries of life to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my laſt lived in the moſt vain oſtentation of ſplendor, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It is difficult to ſay which hypocriſy was moſt abſurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral juſtice. The former baſely ſtealing, as I may ſay, from the publick, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whoſe value ariſes only from its being uſed, by thus ſecreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjuſtifiable as that avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to ſupply the want of it.

I here was ſoon initiated into all the myſteries of that lower ſpecies of trade, called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engroſſed by thoſe people. Falſe weights and meaſures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every ſpecies of deceit, that can impoſe upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a ſcience, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earlieſt exertion of reaſon, to wear off every

every heſitation of conſcience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto eſcaped mutilation, made my maſter, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminiſhed heap, as I ſhould but make their loſs the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purſe, to make a ſhew with upon occaſions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was too ſtrongly ſuſpected.

The evening after I came into his poſſeſſion happened to be one of their moſt ſolemn feſtivals. My maſter therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from buſineſs early, to purify and prepare himſelf for the celebration of the moſt ſecret and myſterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the ſacrifice of the *Paſſover*, which, by a ſecret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood, for which purpoſe the moſt beautiful children were purchaſed at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of neceſſitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of ſervants, if they could not be obtained by ſtealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to theſe ceremonies: it being a long-received opinion, that the original ſacrifice of a lamb was deſigned only for that one occaſion, to conciliate the favour of heaven, to the eſcape of their forefathers out of *Egypt*; but that to render it propitious to their reſtoration to their country, and to the conſummation of their promiſed happineſs and glory, the type muſt be changed for the thing typified,

typified, and human blood, in the pureſt ſtate of infant innocence, be offered inſtead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But as ſome traces of natural affection might remain, even in hearts diveſted of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obſtacle to this practice, and ſtimulate ſuperſtition by hatred and revenge, the children of Chriſtians were appointed for this ſacrifice, and thoſe eſpecially of the ſuperior ranks of life, whoſe pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews, with ſeverity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the inſtitution of the *Paſſover* were literally obſerved, in reſpect to the victim, who was to be *without blemiſh, a male of the firſt year*, that is, the firſt-born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was ſacrificed*, during which time they fed him with the richeſt food, to raiſe him to the higheſt perfection of his nature.

The place choſen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a ſummer-houſe in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their ſynagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As ſoon as they were placed in order, one of the elders ſtood up, and in a long ſpeech declared the occaſion of their meeting, read the original inſtitution of the *Paſſover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the ſacrifice to be offered, as I ſaid before; concluding with an oath of ſecreſy, which all preſent joined in and confirmed with the moſt dreadful imprecations, and which was to be ſealed by the participation of this horrid myſtery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemiſh, and their primogeniture proved, by thoſe who had provided them, who were reimburſed their expences before the ſacrifice began by the general contribution of all preſent.

This method was uſed, that every perſon might have an equal ſhare in the merit of the ſacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expenſive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

The END of the FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few ſurvivors of the firſt fury brought to publick juſtice.

I SEE your aſtoniſhment how ſo abſurd an opinion could ever take poſſeſſion of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleaſed with the breach of his moſt ſtrict command, and rendered propitious by an action againſt which his ſevereſt vengeance is denounced; yet ſuch are the errors which the leaſt deviation from the ſtraight paths of reaſon lead to, when ceremony is made the eſſence of religion, and human inventions

ventions ſubſtituted in the place of immutable, eternal virtue.

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that moſt comprehenſive name, has long been charged with being the author of this and every other vice and folly, which men are aſhamed of owning themſelves; his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuſe. But if man would conſider a little, he muſt bluſh at ſo unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been ſuſpected of being a fool, and nothing elſe could have deviſed ſuch groſs enormities, ſuch contradictions to the plaineſt rules of common reaſon.

But of this ſtrange inſtitution of human ſacrifices, we need ſearch for the original, no farther than in the Heart of man, who obſerving, that to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the firſt of moral virtues, the divine will had directed returns of its bleſſings to be made, in the way of oblation or ſacrifice, ſoon perverted the original purity of the inſtitution to his own depravity, and meaſuring the divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be, and thus he aroſe from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerneſs to obtain the end, for which he thus ſtrove to bribe the favour of heaven, hindering him to ſee the abſurdity of the means he uſed.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the inſtruments for ſlaying, and the fires for roaſting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feaſted on their fleſh) in readineſs, and

the butchers, of whom my maſter was one, juſt going to begin their work, when the doors of the houſe were burſt open, with an outcry, that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of ſoldiers ruſhed in, and ſeized them, as they ſtood ſtupified with their fright.

The horror of the ſight gave a reſpite to their fate, ſtriking the very hearts of the ſoldiers, though hardened by all the cruelties of war, with an aſtoniſhment that deprived them of power to ſtir for ſome moments. But this was only a ſhort calm, that, as it were, gave time to the ſtorm to gather; for, as they ſtood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O, father! father! come and untie my hands! thoſe ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no ſooner ſtruck the ear of the officer, who commanded the party, than ſtarting into a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not diſtinguiſhed before, as he lay naked on the ground, and ſnatching him up in his arms, '*O my child!* (ſaid he in an extaſy) *have I found you! have I reſcued you in the very moment when you were going to be ſacrificed by theſe wretches. O my child! my child.*'

Theſe words awoke the fury of the ſoldiers, which burſt upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be reſtrained. The houſe was in a moment a ſcene of horror beyond deſcription. Moſt of them fell inſtant ſacrifices to this reſiſtleſs rage. Happier far in having ſo ſpeedy an end put to their ſufferings than the few ſurvivors, who ſaved their lives for that moment, by throwing themſelves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of paſſion, the ſoldiers took all care not to hurt.

The

The little reſpite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the ſoldiers, who would not be perſuaded to ſpare the reſt, by any other argument, but a poſitive aſſurance of having them put to the moſt ſevere and infamous publick death.

When the ſtorm was a little calmed by theſe means, and the living ſeparated from the dead, the pillage of the ſcene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the moſt unrelenting ſeverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions, with exemplary juſtice on the miſerable criminals, ſtripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their deſtined victims, who were unbound with the tendereſt care, and carried away till their parents ſhould be diſcovered, or in caſe that could not be, to be educated at the publick expence, as the children of the ſtate, while their intended murderers were thrown into priſon, till a puniſhment ſhould be appointed ſevere enough for their guilt.

In the confuſion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer, who had found his child, whoſe paſſions were raiſed ſo high by the recovery of him, that as ſoon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to ſhare his joy with his diſconſolate wife.

The tenderneſs of this meeting was a juſt reverſe of the former part of the laſt ſcene, where the helpleſs infants were led forth to be ſlaughtered.

As the Jews were ſome of the wealthieſt of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magiſtrates, to prevent the imputation of injuſtice, and to ſet the whole affair

affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early the next morning, where the reſcued infants were produced on one ſide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers on the other, when my new maſter, who bore a conſiderable office in the ſtate, beſide his military command, unfolded the whole affair, in a ſhort, but moving ſpeech. He told them, 'that having 'loſt his only child, the infant there preſent, a-'bout a month before, and having been inform-'ed when he ſerved in *Poland*, in his youth, 'that the Jews had a cuſtom of ſtealing and ſa-'crificing, or murdering infants, on the night 'when they celebrated their *Paſſover*, he made 'no ſearch for him, but ſeemed to believe a ſtory 'which he had invented himſelf, to appeaſe the 'diſtraction of his wife, that he had been killed 'and devoured by a tamewolf, that was kept in 'the garden of his country houſe, from whence 'he was ſtolen, watching, in the mean time, 'every motion of the Jews with uch exactneſs, 'that he had punctual information of their meet-'ing at the place where he had ſeized them the 'evening before; where it was to be lamented, 'that the juſt reſentment of the ſoldiers had an-'ticipated the ſeverer hand of juſtice, and ſaved 'them from the laws, the judgment of which 'he now demanded againſt the remaining few, for 'himſelf and for the unknown parents of the 'innocent victims, whom they ſaw before them.'

A roar of univerſal indignation purſued his words, which had inflamed the rage and deteſtation of the people ſo high, that they were with difficulty reſtrained from tearing the wretches inſtantly in pieces, by the ſame arguments which had

ſaved

ſaved them from the ſoldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to ſay a word in their own defence, for though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controverſy; and beſide, many of the people, who had formerly loſt their children, now charged them with their murder, with the ſtrongeſt appearance of juſtice.

They were therefore dragged back to priſon, where they lay loaded with chains, till the day of their execution, when they were all publickly burned alive on the very ſpot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the houſe being raſed to the ground for that purpoſe, and all the effects of ſuch as were taken in this fact, confiſcated to the uſe of the ſtate.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality properly reſented brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humbled magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflections on the ſight of* CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was ſcarce ended, when I changed my maſter again. The city in which I was, had profeſſed a neutrality in the preſent war, but whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private intereſt, the magiſtrates had, on many occaſions, ſhewn the ſtrongeſt partiality to the enemies of the king of *Bulgaria*.

Of

Of this that heroic prince over-looked many inſtances in compaſſion to their folly; but inſtead of inſpiring them with proper ſentiments of gratitude, this moderation only raiſed their injudicious pride ſo high, that attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded ſo far, as to refuſe him thoſe good offices, which, by the univerſal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his meſſengers with diſreſpect.

This drew on them a reſentment that was never raiſed in vain. The king, without deigning to waſte time in complaints, ſent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their ſafety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with ſubmiſſions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As theſe contributions were too large to be immediately diſcharged by the ſtate, they were obliged to be levied on the ſubjects, by which means I came into the ſervice of this monarch, to whoſe treaſurer I was paid, by the humbled magiſtrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wiſh for ſuch an opportunity of ſeeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions to be. How my expectations were anſwered cannot be explained juſtly without a particular account of every thing I ſaw, while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow ſhort, I ſhall only give you a few of the moſt remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the reſt.

The

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, converſing with the moſt engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redreſſing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magiſtrates of the city I had juſt left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make ſubmiſſion for their miſbehaviour; for to humble them the more effectually he had ordered that they ſhould attend himſelf.

As ſoon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and delivering the money to his treaſurer, implored his pardon, in the moſt abject terms of ſubmiſſion. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the monarch) 'and ceaſe your ſupplications; the poſture and 'addreſs are both improper to be offered to a man; 'but the paſſions of the fooliſh are ever in ex-'tremes; and your fear ſinks you now as low, as 'your vain inſolence raiſed you high before. De-'part in peace and ſafety; and let this teach you 'not to miſtake moderation for fear another time. 'But beware that you offend not ſo again. Mer-'cy, that is amiable in the firſt inſtance, dege-'nerates to folly if extended to a ſecond.'

The magiſtrates, unable to ſpeak before him, retired in confuſion from his preſence, when turning to his treaſurer, 'Take (ſaid he) ſo much 'of that money as will repair the loſſes ſuſtained 'by the innocent inhabitants of the country 'around their city, and ſee that it is given to 'the ſufferers to be applied to that uſe, and none 'other, for I war not with the poor, nor would 'have my ſteps marked by deſolation, when it

'can

'can poſſibly be avoided. And of the remainder 'leave the uſual ſum upon my table, for my pri-'vate occaſions.'

Then addreſſing himſelf to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (ſaid he) is the 'ſubmiſſion of the proud! how does guilt hum-'ble the conſcious heart! Theſe unhappy men, 'who dared not now to meet our eyes, but haſt-'ed with down-caſt looks from the flaſh of juſt 'indignation, when laſt we ſaw them, looked 'us in the face with the aſſurance of friendly re-'ſpect, and ſeemed happy in the marks of our 'regard. Let this teach us to preſerve the 'adamantine ſhield of a clear conſcience, and 'terrour can never ſtrike a dart through it, to 'our hearts.'

When the treaſurer went to divide the money, among which *I* lay, according to his maſter's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I ſhould be torn ſo ſoon from the preſence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his maſter's pages, to lay upon his table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatneſs, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his perſon. This made me ſurprized to find every thing in a plainneſs, far greater than what I had in many inſtances obſerved in private life. But I inſtantly perceived my error, and that his greatneſs was his own, eſtabliſhed on the virtues of his ſoul, and independant of, and ſuperior to every adventitious circumſtance.

I had

I had not lain long upon his table when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two acroſs the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his ſoul in the moſt ardent devotion to heaven.

He then aroſe with a moſt ſerenely chearful countenance, and coming to the table poured out the money, and viewing it earneſtly for a moment, 'O thou ſource of every evil which 'diſtracts this wretched world, (ſaid he) let me 'not be infected by thy poiſon; let not my 'heart conceive a fondneſs for thee, farther than 'what thy native value of enabling it to do 'good, juſtly entitles thee to; I am yet free 'from thine infatuation; nor have ever ſuf-'fered avarice to tempt me to deſire thee, by 'improper means, nor vain luxury, or pride, 'to abuſe thee by profuſion. This pittance only 'do I call my own, which I devote to the divine 'author of all the benefits and mercies of my 'life, in grateful return, by ſupplying with it 'the neceſſities of my diſtreſſed fellow crea-'tures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to obſerve *my* ſhape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is 'there no corner of the earth (ſaid he) where 'the wealth of Britain is not diſperſed? If its 'commerce collects the produce of every climate 'under heaven, its munificence does alſo diffuſe 'its riches as far. Great and happy nation! 'wer't thou but ſenſible of the bleſſings of thy 'condition; but the time is come, when thou 'openeſt thine eyes to thy own intereſt, and 'feeleſt the mightineſs of thy ſtrength. How 'great is the power of true wiſdom! how happy

'the

'the people who have a good man for their 'guide.'

Saying this he put us into his pocket, and as ſoon as it was dark, wrapped himſelf in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a diſguiſe, that ſecured him from miſinformation or deceit.

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in diſguiſe. The exalted pleaſure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp from the effects which I had ſeen of war, made me expect a ſcene of tumult and confuſion. But how was I ſurprized here, to find every thing as regular and tranquil, as in the beſt governed city in the midſt of peace,

My maſter had not walked far, when ſome converſation, that ſeemed to be carried on with warmth in one of the tents, catching his ear, he ſtopped to liſten what might be the ſubject of it. 'I imagine (ſaid a voice within) that we ſhall 'have a battle ſoon: the chearfulneſs of the 'king's looks, and the more than common 'ſpirits he has been in for theſe few days, are 'certain ſigns that he has ſome great things in 'view. I always obſerve him ſo before a bat-'tle.'

'The ſooner it comes the better, (replied an-'other) I only wiſh, that our forces were not ſo

'overmatched in numbers; not that I fear ſucceſs when he is with us; but that we might be able to give them a total defeat at once, and ſo prevent their making head again. For ſuch is the inequality at preſent, that while we are killing half of them the other half eſcape; and though what we deſtroy exceeds the number of our own army, yet another army of the runaways ſtill remains to give us more trouble. But however we muſt only do our duty, and kill them all one after another.'

'And ſo we will, brother, (continued the other) if it pleaſe God to preſerve our king to us; for while we have him we can fear nothing. The number of our enemies only encreaſes the glory of vanquiſhing them. Indeed I wonder how they can ſtand before us even as they do; wretches that are dragged to the war againſt their inclination, who have no intereſt in the event, no attachment to their leaders! But what attachment ſhould they have to ſuch leaders, who ſhew no regard to their diſtreſſes, nor make any proviſion for their wants, but juſt drive them to battle, like oxen to the ſlaughter, and when it is over, take no farther care about them, but let them periſh by famine, if they cannot relieve themſelves by plundering the unhappy countries, friends or enemies alike, through which they go?'

'Well, brother (returned a third voice) thank God that is not our caſe; we follow a leader who is a father to his ſoldiers, and provides for all their occaſions. We fight for ourſelves, and our families, for our laws and religion, and are ſure that he will ſupport us in the enjoyment of them, when he has diſappointed

'the

'the deſigns of his enemies, and reſtored peace 'to his people: but if we are to fight to-morrow 'we had better take our reſt to-night, to make 'us freſh and ſtrong for the battle. God bleſs 'and preſerve our king; while his care watches 'over us, we can ſleep in ſafety in the midſt of 'our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praiſe melted the heart of the king with the ſublimeſt delight, and drew the tear of tenderneſs from his eye. 'O 'my God (ſaid he, when the voices ceaſed) 'enable me to protect this people, and to bring 'this juſt war to an happy end, that they may 'enjoy the fruit of their virtues.'—He then continued his progreſs, in which he met many ſuch occaſions of conſcious pleaſure. When he ſaw that all things were in proper order in the camp; his next care was to viſit the quarters of the wounded and ſick, for he would not truſt them to any perſon, where he could poſſibly attend to them himſelf.

The manner in which all things were ordered here, for the relief and comfort of the evils inſeparable from war, were alone ſufficient to raiſe the higheſt idea of the tenderneſs and humane care, which directed and ſupported it. No riot or diſorder; no negligence or abuſe among the attendants; no miſapplication or embezzlement of the proviſions made for the patients: all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other ſcenes of the ſame nature which I had ſeen before!

If he was delighted with the ſpirited attachment of his ſoldiers in health, his delight was almoſt raiſed to extaſy, by the behaviour of theſe victims of the madneſs of the great. The thought

of having ſuffered in his cauſe, the extremeſt anguiſh of pain, nor even the agonies of death ever making them utter a ſyllable to his diſadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preſervation was always joined with their own relief, and his happineſs recommended with their ſouls to heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne; he joined in the general prayer, and haſted from the tender ſcene as ſoon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a ſtrict view of every thing, in which his orders might be diſobeyed; and theſe his particular family, as he called them, ſuffer by neglect.

His tour was now finiſhed, and he returned to his tent, to take his neceſſary reſt, having diſtributed, on the various occaſions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him, except *me*, who happened to ſtick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exerciſe, and ſerenity of conſcience enſured his repoſe; he fell aſleep the moment his head touched the pillow, nor awoke till his uſual early time of riſing the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of ſuch a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head, and undiſmayed heart, and ſoon reduced the confuſion of them into ſuch order, as made their execution eaſy.

As the ſoldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The king had ſcarce finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I expected it, (ſaid the king 'coolly) I knew they could not remain long in 'the ſituation they were in. But let us obſerve

'their

'their motions, that we may regulate ours by 'them.'

Then ordering ſome of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring houſe, from whence he could view them diſtinctly, where having obſerved them attentively for ſome conſiderable time, 'It is done, my friends!' (ſaid he, with a ſmile of joy that enlightened all his face) 'it is done! that laſt motion is what 'we wanted. Let us haſte and embrace the op-'portunity which heaven has put into our 'hands.'---- Then deſcending with an alacrity that inſpired every beholder, he made his diſpoſitions for the battle, and putting himſelf at the head of his forces, marched directly againſt the enemy.

Deſcriptions of battles are never ſatisfactory; the confuſion is too great, and the buſineſs of the ſcene too complex, to be brought into the regularity of any one deſign. I ſhall therefore only ſay, that my maſter was compleatly victorious; and to raiſe his own glory the higher, the victory was intirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in perſon; the excellent diſpoſition he had made of the reſt, rendering it unneceſſary for them to do more than ſtand ſpectators of the action, from the ſituation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being ſurrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without reſiſtance: the field was long and obſtinately diſputed, and my maſter often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to ſubmit to ſuperior valour; and the evening ſun ſaw his banners wave in triumph, where thoſe of

his enemies had menaced his deſtruction in the morning.--- If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and expoſed himſelf to every ſhape of death in the action, had ſtruck me with aſtoniſhment, I was not leſs affected by his conduct after it was over; when cooling inſtantly from that enthuſiaſm of courage, he gave his orders for ſecuring the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy ſufferers, both friends and enemies without diſtinction, and for refreſhing his own laboured ſoldiers, with all the ſerenity of peace.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reaſon to admire his maſter. A ſtranger throws himſelf at his feet to implore juſtice. The ſtory of the ſtranger.*

THE tranſactions ſucceeding this event, were but the common occurrences on ſuch occaſions, in which there is always ſomething ſo cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and ſo ſevere in the ſufferings of the vanquiſhed, that to a being free from the contradictory phrenſies of mankind, the very thought is painful.----- His majeſty's next care, after returning publick thanks to heaven, on the very ſpot where its favour had been ſo ſignal, was to reward the behaviour of his ſoldiers: he praiſed! he promoted! he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and diſpoſitions. Nor was his juſtice more bounteous

reous in the reward of merit, than ſevere in the puniſhment of the want of it.

Under ſuch a leader, what forces could withſtand his ſoldiers? Under the diſcerning eye of ſuch a prince, who was not actuated with ambition to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the execution of his duty, to obtain his favour? who dared to be guilty of diſobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle the victorious army was directly marched away to a ſiege, their ſucceſs in which was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was ſo ſhocking, that the virtues of my maſter were not a ballance to the horrors of his ſervice, and I began to wiſh for a releaſe from ſuch a ſcene of *glory*, when an unexpected occaſion ſhewed me his character in a light, that raiſed my admiration of him ſtill higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private ſoldier, threw himſelf proſtrate acroſs his way, crying, '*Mercy! O great king! have mercy on* '*the ſufferings of a wretch in deſpair, and ſhew* '*yourſelf the ſubſtitute of heaven by impartial juſ-* '*tice.*'--- The guards and attendants on the king would have ſpurned the ſuppliant out of the way, but his majeſty, ſtruck with the ſtrangeneſs of the addreſs, and imagining it muſt proceed from ſome extraordinary cauſe, interpoſed and bidding him ariſe, 'What is the grievance you 'complain of?' (ſaid he, with a placid look and

encouraging accent) 'or againſt whom do you ſo 'ſolemnly implore juſtice?'

'O, great and good king' (replied the ſtranger, with an air that beſpoke ſomething above his preſent appearance) 'my griefs are too many to 'be told ſo conciſely as your preſent ſituation 'demands, and the juſtice I implore will require 'time to diveſt nature of its ſtrongeſt paſſions.'-- 'What can this mean! (ſaid the monarch in 'ſurprize;) meet me directly at my tent, and ex-'pect that juſtice which the ſimplicity of truth 'ſhall be intitled to, without theſe laboured ex-'clamations.' ---- The buſineſs which his mind was intent upon, prevented the king's thinking any more of this affair, till he ſaw the man at his return to his tent; when calling to him, 'Now (ſaid he) ſpeak your griefs with the bold-'neſs, but alſo with the guard of truth, and 'doubt not the redreſs of juſtice.' --- Encouraged by theſe words, the ſtranger bowing his head, and pauſing a moment, as if to ſupport his grief, began thus: 'So may the ear of heaven be ever 'open to thy petitions, O gracious king, as thou 'haſt readily vouchſafed to hear my cries! ſo 'may its juſtice redreſs thy wrongs, as thou 'ſhalt deal with mine. Thou ſeeſt before thee 'the moſt wretched of mankind, whom deſpair 'has reduced to the neceſſity of flying from the 'defence of his country, and imploring juſtice 'for his private wrongs, from the declared foe 'of my ſovereign. But let me not waſte your 'time with fruitleſs complaints. My name, 'though ſpoken with ſome reſpect in my native 'country, is too obſcure to have reached your 'ears, as my anceſtors wiſely confined their vir-'tues to private life, nor ever laboured to em-

'blazon

'blazon their names with titles, that too often 'mar the happieſt of their owners.

'In their ſteps I trod, till the wrath of heaven 'kindled the ambition of princes, and my coun-'try became the theatre of their contention. I 'then thought it my duty to ariſe in its defence, 'and the juſtice of my motive drew ſucceſs on 'my attempts. But while I vainly indulged the 'hope of being inſtrumental in delivering my 'country from the horrors of war, a foe broke 'into my houſe, thus deſtitute of its defender, 'and rifled all the treaſure of my ſoul. O, my 'unhappy wife! my newly wedded, beauteous 'wife! in vain didſt thou call upon me in the 'hour of thy diſtreſs! when the hand of the 'raviſher was twiſted in thine hair, and the hor-'rors of immediate ruin took poſſeſſion of thy 'ſoul! Thy protector was away, buſied in the 'defence of others, while the wolf was ravaging 'his deſerted fold.

'But whither does my diſtraction hurry me? 'O pardon, gracious monarch, the inconſiſten-'cies of deſpair! I will be brief; I will not treſ-'paſs on thy precious time.' ---- He pauſed then a moment, till a flood of tears eaſed the fulneſs of his heart, and then proceeded thus.

'In the irruption of thy troops into *Bohemia*, 'about ſix months ago, my unhappy fortune 'led a party of them to my houſe, where the 'induſtry of my anceſtors, for ages of peace, 'fell a ſacrifice to the wantonneſs of unreſtrained 'devaſtation in one moment. But I complain 'not of this. It was my ſhare of the indiſ-'criminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of 'another nature.

'The beauty of my wife ſtruck the very hardened hearts of the ſoldiers with ſuch reverence, that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay a ſacrilegious hand on her: but this ſafeguard that protected her from rapine, only raiſed the more audacious rage of luſt againſt her. The officer who commanded the party no ſooner ſaw her, than inflamed with brutal deſire, he hurried her away with him to the camp, where imagination ſhrinks in horror, from the thought of what ſhe may have ſuffered.

'The news of my misfortune ſoon reached me: no reſtraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment; I flew to the ſcene of my ruin, where, having learned what I have related to you, the greatneſs of my grief ſtupified me for a time, till the thought of my wife's being ſtill alive, and in the poſſeſſion of her raviſher, rouzed me to a reſolution of labouring for her relief. I therefore, immediately entered in diſguiſe into thoſe very troops which had perpetrated my ruin, as I deſpaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My ſtratagem had ſucceſs; I ſoon learned that the officer, who had brought my wife from my houſe, had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded her as ſoon as ſhe had been brought to the camp.

'A dawn of hope broke in upon me; though I could not gain any account of her after this, I thought that a man, honoured with your particular eſteem, muſt be poſſeſſed of virtue, and this I knew muſt be her protection.

'Big

'Big with this hope I found means to rejoin 'my own corps, where my abſence was eaſily 'excuſed to a general who was my friend, and 'who readily yielded to my requeſt of ſending a 'trumpet, with a letter to enquire for ſuch a 'lady, and to deſire that ſhe might be treated 'with the tenderneſs and reſpect due to her ſex, 'and beauty, till ſhe ſhould be reſtored to her 'friends.

'But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, 'when an anſwer was returned, that the general 'knew not of ſuch a perſon. Deſpair now 'ſtared me in the face; I ſaw all the horrors of 'my condition; and would that inſtant have 'returned in my diſguiſe and ſtabbed the raviſher 'at the head of his forces, had I not reflected 'that my *Theodora* might be only expoſed by 'ſuch an action, to new inſults, and her life 'perhaps ſacrificed in torture and ignominy to 'revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this diſtreſs, heaven in-'ſpired me with the thought of having recourſe 'to your juſtice. Though he is the enemy of 'my ſovereign, ſaid I, he is *a man* who feels the 'tender impulſe of humanity; he is a *king*, who 'delights in juſtice! I therefore reaſſumed my 'diſguiſe and entered into your camp, as a de-'ſerter, the night before this battle, in which 'inſtinctive abhorrence of cowardice urged me 'to the duty of a ſoldier, and I happened to fight 'near your perſon; where, though I was ſen-'ſible of my crime, in aſſiſting the enemy of my 'ſovereign, I had this palliative conſolation, that 'the forces I engaged were not my fellow-ſub-'jects, but thoſe of a perfidious ally, who en-'tered into the war only to take his own ad-

'vantage,

'vantage, when a proper opportunity ſhould 'offer.

'This, O gracious king, is my unhappy 'ſtory; this is the grievance for which I im-'plore thy juſtice; for which I fought againſt 'the allies of my ſovereign yeſterday; for which 'I threw myſelf before your horſe's feet this 'morning; for which I now call upon you by 'that power who has placed you as his ſubſti-'tute on earth, and will require an account of 'thy ſtewardſhip. O juſtice! juſtice! juſ-'tice!'

CHAP. V.

The king ſends for the general, and orders the ſtranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the ſtory of the ſtranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of ſoul.

THE king heard out the ſtranger's ſtory without interruption, and then addreſſing himſelf to his officers and attendants round him, 'How unhappy (ſaid he) is the condition of 'princes, who muſt be anſwerable for the crimes 'of their ſervants, as if every man's own were 'not more than he can bear.

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him 'brave; I thought juſtice and mercy attemper-'ed valour in his breaſt. But perhaps he is 'wronged; let us not judge too haſtily; go, '(turning to one of his officers) bid him come

'to

'to me directly, nor tell him a word of the occaſion; if he is guilty he has forfeited my eſteem for ever; but if this complaint is only a calumny deviſed to exaſperate me againſt one of my beſt friends, ſeverely ſhall the author of it feel that juſtice which he ſo ſolemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken into cuſtody 'till the event decides the doubt; but let him be treated with that humanity which his apparent diſtreſs ſtands in need of; nor let any hardſhip or indignity give juſtice the appearance of prejudice, or ſeem to intimidate his reſolution.'

He then retired to enjoy thoſe few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His majeſty's commands were ſo punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his maſter, who received him with his uſual familiarity, and having confer'd with him for ſome time, on the ſituation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the ſtranger to be brought to confront him, and then ſpoke thus, as if in continuation of his former diſcourſe: 'It has ever been my ſtrongeſt wiſh, my moſt poſitive command, that the calamities of this neceſſary war ſhould fall as light as poſſible on the innocent ſubjects of thoſe powers who have provoked it: particularly I have always enjoined the ſtricteſt care, to avoid every unneceſſary devaſtation of private property, every appearance of cruelty, or ill treatment to the defenceleſs weakneſs of the aged, of women, and children. What then muſt be my grief to find theſe or-

'ders

'ders, diſobeyed? to find that the ruins of the 'poor mark the marches of my armies, and the 'cries of private anguiſh ariſe to heaven againſt 'me? But theſe enormities ſhall not lie on my 'head, for neglect of puniſhing them; nor be 'perſiſted in on the hope of impunity. Were 'my right hand guilty of ſuch crimes I would 'cut it off with my left, rather than it ſhould in-'fect my mind.'

The ſolemnity with which the king ſpoke theſe words, ſtruck all preſent with terror for *the accuſed*, who alone was ignorant of their deſign. The king ſaw the general concern, and to let the impreſſion ſink the deeper, he pauſed ſome moments before he proceeded; then turning ſhort upon the general with a determined look, and awful voice, 'Tell me (ſaid he) where 'is the woman, whom thou hadſt from the of-'ficer who brought her to the camp, when the 'forces under thy command entered into *Bohe-'mia?* the woman whom the *Bohemian* general 'ſent to enquire after in vain; and whom I 'fear thou didſt deny, and ſtill detaineſt for pur-'poſes too baſe to mention?'

The unexpectedneſs of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all preſence of mind: he ſtood abaſhed, and the confuſion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king ſaw his diſtreſs with the greateſt concern, but ſuperior to every private regard that could interfere with his ſublimer character, 'Tell me where ſhe is 'this inſtant! (ſaid he) nor aggravate by falſ-'hood, crimes already too flagrant; for I will 'know the whole of this black affair.'

'O, ſir! (replied the general, throwing him-'ſelf at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but

'I cannot

'I cannot bear thy wrath; let me die this mo-
'ment; let that puniſhment expiate my guilt;
'but afflict me not longer with thy diſpleaſure,
'which is heavier than I can bear.'---*Where is*
'*the Woman? ſpeak.*'-- 'Safe and inviolate in my
'tent. My intreaties have not been able to prevail
'on her virtue; and my paſſion was too delicate
'to ſeek gratification by force.'--- '*This moment*
'*let her be ſent for! and let the cauſe of her coming*
'*be concealed from her: I will learn the truth of*
'*this ſtrange affair from herſelf. In the mean*
'*time let her huſband be treated with tenderneſs and*
'*reſpect. His misfortunes deſerve compaſſion.*'

The king had ſcarce ſaid this, when an expreſs arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulſed with great loſs, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.' ---'*Thy will be done, O God,* (ſaid the king) *thy* '*will be done.*'--And then without any appearance of ſurprize or alteration in his looks, he inſtantly gave orders for a ſtrong detachment of the army under his own command, to march to the reinforcement of that which had ſuffered this loſs; and retired to conſider of the alterations which this event muſt neceſſarily occaſion in the operations of the campaign, and write his ſeveral orders accordingly, for he was his own ſecretary.

But though his looks were thus eaſy, his heart ſeverely felt this misfortune; 'O God (ſaid he as 'ſoon as he was alone) when will thy wrath be 'appeaſed? When ſhall this people have reſt? 'If *I* am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall 'on my head alone, but ſpare them! There is 'nothing certain in this life; nothing worth a

'wiſe

'wiſe man's care or regard; the victory with 'which it pleaſed thee to bleſs our arms ſo lately, 'raiſed my hopes to a proſpect of peace. But 'the ſcene is now changed; and this advantage 'will raiſe the pride and malice of our enemies 'ſtill higher, and make new deluges of blood 'neceſſary to bring them to a ſenſe of reaſon and 'juſtice. Thy will be done, O Lord; but as 'it is not yet declared, it is our duty to make uſe 'of the means which thou haſt put into our pow-'er, to accompliſh that end, which appears to us 'moſt juſt and advantageous. The horrors of 'war are ready to burſt upon my country after all 'my endeavours to ſave it, and divert them elſe-'where. But they ſhall not un-oppoſed; I my-'ſelf will ſtand in the breach, and defend my na-'tive country.'

The ſerenity in the looks of the king had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateſt alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occaſioned neither diſorder nor confuſion. Active as light, the king *was* every where, *ordered* every thing, *ſaw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his ſoldiers as for the greateſt poſſible expedition of their march. His armies might be vanquiſhed, for they were but men; but to deject or diſorder *his* mind was not in the power of any event.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.*

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the king ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firſt ſight of this woman raiſed emotions in his heart, which it had long been a ſtranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a ſweetneſs and expreſſion in her looks beyond deſcription, ſoon made him ſenſible that all his heroiſm could not eradicate the paſſions of nature, and raiſed his pity both for the unfortunate general and for her huſband.

He ſtood ſome moments gazing at her in ſilent aſtoniſhment; but recollecting himſelf ſoon, he addreſſed her thus with the higheſt complacency and reſpect, in his look and accent. 'I 'have ſent for you, madam, to this improper 'place for the delicacy of your ſex, to learn from 'yourſelf the manner of your having been 'brought away from *Bohemia*, and the cauſe of 'your being ſince detained by the general of my 'army. Speak, madam, have you ſuffered any 'violence, any uſage improper for your ſex and 'merit?

'merit? ſpeak with the aſſurance of truth, and 'expect juſtice and redreſs.'

'O mighty king, (ſaid the lady, proſtrating 'herſelf at his feet) oft have I heard of thy won-'drous virtues; but never 'till this moment could 'I think that you could ſtoop ſo low as to take 'notice of my wretchedneſs. My ſad ſtory is 'no more than this; I was torn from my houſe 'by an officer of your army; I was hurried a-'way to the camp by him; and there inſulted 'by the baſe offers of his love; but heaven de-'livered me from him. Your general heard of 'my diſtreſs and reſcued me from his power: 'ſince which time I have had no perſonal cauſe 'of complaint, beſide the indiſcriminate calami-'ty of the wars, which have robbed me of my 'huſband, and left me a friendleſs widow in the 'hands of mine enemies.'---A flood of tears here ſtopped her utterance.

The king raiſing her from the ground, proceed-ed thus: 'A widow, madam, did you ſay; how 'long ſince have you loſt your huſband, and by 'what means did you hear of his death?'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) as ſoon as I was freed 'from the horrors of brutal violence by the 'general, I wrote to my huſband with his per-'miſſion, but received no anſwer to many, very 'many letters. This ſuſpence was worſe than 'death, and almoſt drove me to deſpair; till the 'general at length, in compaſſion to my miſery, 'wrote himſelf to the commander of the army 'in which my huſband had ſerved, who returned 'him for anſwer, that he had been killed about 'the time I was taken priſoner. O! happy had 'been my lot had I ſhared his fate!'

'I hope,

'I hope, madam, (ſaid the king) you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: 'I hope my General has not miſbehaved himſelf 'to you.'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) I have received no injuries, beſide the irreparable loſs of my huſband, after which I can have no deſire to live. 'As for the General, he has always treated me 'with the greateſt compaſſion and tenderneſs: 'but now will your majeſty hear the voice of affliction? will you grant the only wiſh of an 'heart in deſpair? let me be conveyed to ſome 'religious houſe, where I may devote the ſad 'remnant of my days to the ſervice of heaven, 'far from the knowledge of the General and 'every other perſon, who has ever heard my 'name. I am ſenſible of the preſumption of 'troubling you with this requeſt; but to whom 'ſhould we fly in the moment of diſtreſs, except 'to heaven, or its vicegerents, eſpecially thoſe 'whoſe virtues give its ſeal to their authority.'

'You may depend (returned the king) upon 'every endeavour of my power, to make you 'happy. But, madam, what meant the particular mention of the General, in your deſire of 'being retired from the knowledge of the world? 'Pray be ingenuous; I hope he has not tranſgreſſed the limits of his own virtue and my 'command.'

'O, ſire! (replied ſhe) miſtake not the incoherencies of diſtraction; the General has 'always treated me with reſpect and tenderneſs; 'tenderneſs in exceſs, for nothing can be hid 'from you, was the only thing my ſoul could 'diſapprove in his behaviour. He offered me 'honourable love; but, alas, my huſband! my

'dear

'dear huſband has poſſeſſion of this heart! there 'he is buried! nor ever ſhall another love diſturb 'his dear remembrance.'

'Madam, be comforted, (returned the king;) 'ſuch virtue as your's is the peculiar care of hea- 'ven; you may be happy yet; your huſband 'may be ſtill alive: in the diſorders of theſe un- 'happy times, many ſtrange things happen; 'many who are thought to be alive are long ſince 'dead; many who have been long thought dead 'are found to be alive.'--- '*O ſire! what can your 'words import? you would not jeſt with miſery! 'you cannot ſpeak in vain! O, am I yet to hope af- 'ter ſo long deſpair?*'--'Hope! always hope! 'but I ſhall ſend a proper perſon to explain my 'words.'

Saying this, the king went to the door of his tent, and ſeeing her huſband burſting with anxiety and impatience, he called him, 'Go (ſaid he) in 'there, and ſee what bleſſings heaven reſerves 'for virtue; go in alone; ſuch meltings of the 'ſoul as muſt attend your meeting are too deli- 'cate to be expoſed to other eyes.'

Then turning to the General, 'You have be- 'haved nobly, my friend, (ſaid he) in ſuch 'temptation, which was almoſt too great for 'human virtue; had you injured ſuch excellence, 'dear as you are to my heart, your life ſhould 'have expiated the crime. But you have be- 'haved nobly; in ſuch a trial, it is virtue to 'refrain from vice; the errors you have fallen 'into are but the weakneſſes of nature; for to have 'been inſenſible to her beauty and perfections 'would have argued a deficiency in humanity.-- 'But beware, my friend, of indulging thoſe paſ- 'ſions; they enervate the heart and wean the ſoul

'inſen-

'inſenſibly from virtue; the example is before 'thine eyes; ſee how the violence of love has 'been able to urge the noble heart of this wo-'man's huſband, to deſert his charge, to enter 'into the ſervice of his enemies, to fight againſt 'the dictates of his own conſcience: think of this 'and be more cautious for the future; the heart 'of a ſoldier has not room for love.'

The General, unable to reply, threw himſelf at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I under-'ſtand you, (ſaid the king, ſmiling) your paſſion 'is not quite cured; but you ſhall have employ-'ment to wear off this ruſt of idleneſs: return to 'your command this moment, and expect my 'farther orders.'

The General obeyed, and the king addreſſing thoſe around him, 'To be without fault (ſaid he) 'were not to be a man; he is the beſt who has 'the ſmalleſt; and allowance is to be made for 'human frailty, where the temptation is too 'great for human virtue.'

As the king ſaid this, the ſtranger and his wife came out together, and throwing themſelves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful extaſy. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the monarch) and be hap-'py in each other. I have reſtored you your 'wife, (ſaid he to the huſband) and am ready to 'do you every further inſtance of juſtice which 'you can demand.'

'My ſoul is ſatisfied, O gracious king; my 'ſoul is ſatisfied, (replied he,) I aſk no more of 'heaven, but to reward your goodneſs, your 'juſtice and compaſſion.'

'But there is one thing more to be conſidered, '(ſaid the king:) your eſtate was waſted; your 'houſes burned by my ſoldiers; I do not know

'the

'the loſs you may have ſuffered: take this, (giv-
'ing him a large purſe of gold) if that is not ſuf-
'ficient to repair it, when heaven in mercy to
'mankind ſhall bid the calamities of war to ceaſe,
'if my life is ſpared, come to me and I will re-
'move every cauſe of your complaint. I do not
'aſk you to enter into my ſervice in this war, but
'if your honour, your conſcience oppoſe it not,
'you may expect every encouragement due to
'your merit.'

'O ſire! it is too much! your goodneſs over-
'whelms me! I will retire from the ſeat of war!
'I will implore heaven for your happineſs and
'ſafety; and tho' I cannot, may not fight for
'you, my arm ſhall never more be raiſed againſt
'you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the king no leſs happy in being the author of their happineſs, than his goodneſs and bounty had made them.---I here quitted the ſervice of this great prince, being in the purſe which he gave to the ſtranger. The happineſs which this pair experienced in being thus unexpectedly reſtored to each other is not to be expreſſed; the delicacy of their love being as much too ſublime for deſcription, as the ſenſuality of other ſcenes was beneath it. In a word; they wanted, they wiſhed for nothing more, and to ſecure the poſſeſſion of what they enjoyed, they reſolved to go and live privately with his brother, an eccleſiaſtick in *Vienna*, till the war ſhould be at an end, and they might with ſafety return into their own country. This reſolution was ſoon taken; they applied for paſſports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick

Sick as I was of ſuch a ſcene of blood, I own I could not leave this prince without reluctance. I ſee you are deſirous that I ſhould give you a character of him; but I muſt not gratify your curioſity; what I have told you of his actions may convince you, that he is the greateſt of men: but humanity is too frail to be able to form any definitive judgment from his paſt, for his future life. Succeſs may elevate; misfortune may ſour his mind; and ſo overthrow that equality of it, which now raiſes him almoſt above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly ſteady enough to be relied on: ſo that his dependance is ſolely on the attachment of his own ſubjects, on the ſtrength of his own ſoul.

What will be the event of his fortune is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I muſt ſay, that if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his ſtruggles will exhauſt their ſtrength, and leave them an eaſy prey to a foe, *(the Turk)* whoſe ſilence makes them not apprehenſive of him, but who laughs in his heart to ſee them thus do his work, and deſtroy againſt each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A deſign which he certainly meditates, and will not loſe a moment to put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The hiſtory of his maſter's brother. His miſſion, labours, and ſucceſs in* ENGLAND. *He is ſent to* PERU. *He diſapproves of the precipitancy of the meaſures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.*

IF the immediate ſcene of the war was ſhocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worſe. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too buſy to attend to every minute diſtreſs: but here a diſmal deſolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waſte; the villages in aſhes; the inhabitants periſhing in the fields and high roads, of wounds, ſickneſs, famine, and every various kind of miſery, which the madneſs of human nature can inflict upon itſelf.

Through ſuch monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my maſter and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who inſiſted on their living in his houſe. The ſcene was here changed from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and eaſe of peace.

The moment I ſaw this eccleſiaſtick, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at ſuch a diſtance, raiſed a cu-

a curioſity to know the cauſe of his removal, from a place where I thought I had left him ſettled, in all the happineſs which riches and ſenſual pleaſures could afford.

It was not long before this curioſity was gratified; for the very evening after my maſter's arrival, he led him to walk in his garden, and ſitting down under a tree on the brink of a fountain, addreſſed him thus.

'It is many years, my deareſt brother, ſince 'I had the happineſs of ſeeing you laſt. Various have been the climates I have gone through! 'various the viciſſitudes of my fortune ſince that 'day! from deſpair to exultation! from royal 'affluence and power to apprehenſion of periſhing by famine, or in a priſon. Wonder not 'at my words; I will explain them to you in a 'ſhort view of my life, which it is neceſſary I 'ſhould give you, to prepare you for the participation of ſecrets, in which your aſſiſtance 'may be employed in eſtabliſhing the moſt extenſive and firm power, which ever yet was 'raiſed upon this globe.---- You may remember, 'though you were then very young, that the 'repreſentations of the *Jeſuit* to whoſe care our 'education was committed, made ſuch an impreſſion upon me, that in deſpight of my father's threats and intreaties, I renounced my 'patrimony in your favour, and taking only a 'ſmall ſum of money to defray the expences of 'my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my 'tutor, where I readily obtained admiſſion into 'the *Society of Jeſus* as ſoon as I had gone 'through the uſual preparatory forms of education.

'Nothing remarkable happened to me during 'the firſt years of my being profeſſed, my ſtu- 'dies engroſſing my whole time and attention, 'in which I made ſuch a proficiency, that the 'general of the order thought it proper to ſend me 'into the world, in the ſervice of the ſociety.

'The firſt ſtage of my miſſion was to *Eng- 'land*, whither I went to counteract the poiſon 'which was diſpenſing againſt us, by an apoſtate 'of our order, who under the pretence of em- 'ploying his abilities in the ſervice of the ſociety, 'had been admitted to all the libraries, and ſuf- 'fered to take extracts from all the records of the 'church. But no ſooner had he made ſuch a 'collection, as he thought ſufficient for his pur- 'poſe, than he fled to *England*, his native 'country, where renouncing his vows and reli- 'gion, he turned the weapons which had been 'entruſted in his hands for the defence of the 'church, againſt her, employing the abſtracts 'he had made to the defamation of the cha- 'racter, and ſubverſion of the power, of the *Holy 'See*.

'My ſucceſs in this my firſt negociation, (for 'in defiance of truth, reaſon, conſcience, and 'common ſenſe, by plauſible inſinuations, by 'forged certificates, or, which was the ſame 'thing, by certificates from people who would 'certify any thing in their own favour, againſt a 'man who attacked the very fundamentals of 'their power; by bribery, ſubornation, perjury, 'and every kind of artifice, I, in a great mea- 'ſure, defeated his deſign, and overturned the 'authority of his work;) my ſucceſs, I ſay, in 'this difficult undertaking, for he had gone out 'from among ourſelves, and was verſed in our

'whole

'whole ſcience, encouraged the order to con-
'tinue me in that miſſion, but in an higher
'office.

'The laws, religion, and government of the
'nation were now the objects aſſigned to my
'attacks, in which I laboured with various ſuc-
'ceſs for ſome years, in every character which
'human volubility could aſſume. I was a qua-
'ker; a methodiſt; a deiſt; I wrote for the
'miniſtry, or againſt the government, as the pre-
'vailing humour of the day promiſed attention
'to my writings. The ſea which flows around
'that iſland, being not more unſteady than the
'minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable to
'be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they
'by every breath of popular rumour.

'I proceeded thus for ſome time, with vari-
'ous ſucceſs, till happening to diſcloſe ſome ſe-
'cret tranſactions, which were known there only
'to the perſons concerned, and had been com-
'municated to me from abroad, in order to ſow
'diſſention between the people and their govern-
'ors, to the ruin of both; the conſcious parties
'were alarmed, and my intelligence traced ſo
'ſecretly, that I had difficulty to eſcape by flight,
'from an ignominious death, which the reſent-
'ment of thoſe whoſe ruinous machinations I
'had thus diſcovered to their country, would
'certainly have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which thou-
'ſands had failed before me, was no prejudice to
'my character, nor in the leaſt leſſened me in
'the opinion of the order. On the contrary,
'the efforts I had made were ſo daring, ſo deeply
'laid, and ſo well conducted, that I was now judged
'a proper perſon to be employed in greater matters.

'I was therefore ſent, the next year, to what 'is called *the Spaniſh* world, but is really *the* 'Jeſuits heaven in *America*, where matters of the 'higheſt moment were juſt ripe for execution. '—When I came there I found things in a 'forwardneſs too great for their foundation; 'the eagerneſs of ſome of our people hurrying 'on events before proper preparation had enſured 'their ſucceſs. In ſhort, they were ready to 'revolt from *Spain* and *Portugal* before they had 'made proviſions to ſupport themſelves in ſuch 'an attempt. They wanted European officers, 'ſoldiers, arms, and ammunition, for on the 'natives there is no dependance; but, above 'all, the time was unfavourable. The powers 'they meant to attack in this vital part, were at 'peace with all the world, and conſequently at 'liberty to turn their whole force againſt them.

'I therefore counſelled them to moderate their 'zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a 'more favourable minute ſhould make their ſuc-'ceſs more probable. But they would not hear-'ken to my advice, but attributed it to envy, 'or want of reſolution: on which I left them to 'their own ill-fortune, and haſted home to pro-'vide a remedy, for evils which I could not pre-'vent.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhews the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL, *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He propoſes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accompliſh his particular, deſign.*

'THE event has confirmed my opinion; 'by ſtriking too ſoon, the blow has been 'ineffectual. However things, though diſcon-'certed by this precipitancy, are not quite ruin-'ed; and care may yet repair the effects of their 'folly.

'In this cauſe I now labour, in concert with 'others of my brethren in every court of *Europe*; 'and I have the ſatisfaction to think that we have 'a proſpect of ſucceſs. The only obſtacle that 'retards us at preſent, is the difficulty of mak-'ing the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into 'the war againſt *England*. Could we bring 'this to bear, our work would be eaſy. The 'mighty naval power of *England* will not only 'prevent their ſending over forces to oppreſs us, 'before we can eſtabliſh our power, but will 'alſo aſſiſt us to carry on the war, to ſhare in 'the ſpoil, and diſtreſs their enemies.

'But while the preſent kings are on the 'thrones of thoſe kingdoms it will be ſcarcely 'poſſible to bring our deſigns to perfection, they

'are ſo utterly averſe to hazarding the conſe-
'quences of a war, with a nation from whoſe
'alliance they receive ſuch advantages. --- The
'firſt thing therefore which we do muſt be to
'remove them. The former has already ſwal-
'lowed his death, though the proceſs will be ſo
'ſlow as to eſcape ſuſpicion: with the other,
'ſuch caution is not neceſſary, nor is there time
'for it. The arm is already lifted againſt him,
'for a ſtroke that will terrify the world.

'When theſe obſtacles are removed, the exe-
'cution of our deſigns will meet with no far-
'ther delay. The ſucceſſors to theſe princes we
'have ſecured ſuch an influence on, that we can
'work them to whatever we pleaſe, and have
'already poiſoned their minds with prejudices
'againſt *England* *.

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and
'experience to command our forces, is the next
'object of our care. Shall I candidly own to
'you, that ſuch a length of time and multiplicity
'of affairs had almoſt obliterated all my remem-
'brance of my family; but the moment I heard
'your name mentioned with the reſpect due to
'your merits in the preſent war, a flood of in-
'fant fondneſs melted my heart, and tears of
'tendereſt joy acknowledged that I had a bro-
'ther. I immediately gave notice to our Gene-
'ral, and by his order am empowered to treat
'thus with you.

'On my engagement for your fidelity, for
'your abilities are known to be far ſuperior to

---

* *The conduct of the preſent king of* SPAIN, *hitherto, ſhews that the Jeſuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at leaſt.*

'any

'any that ſhall oppoſe you, I am commiſſioned 'to offer you the ſupreme command of all our 'forces in this great undertaking. With what 'joy I make this offer, the pleaſure that you 'would feel in ſerving your brother, can beſt 'enable you to judge.

'Though I will tell you farther, that mine is 'raiſed higher than common feelings can convey 'a notion of. I have hitherto only unfolded the 'general deſign of our order, in which I am but 'a party, though a principal and material one. 'But ſhall I tell you alſo, that my deſigns ter-'minate not with their's: as your command 'will make you maſter of all their force; and 'as power is the conſequence of that, you will 'be able to confer it where you pleaſe; or in-'deed rather to retain it in your own hands, 'while I ſhall only eaſe you of the trouble of con-'ducting and eſtabliſhing the policy of an infant 'ſtate.

'This was my motive for writing to you ſo 'preſſingly to come to me to *Vienna*. This is 'the end which I have been labouring for all my 'life. I am advanced in years, and ſhall never 'marry to beget an heir; you are young and will 'have many. Aſſiſt me therefore to acquire a 'throne, which muſt deſcend to your poſterity: 'a throne, which by holding it at firſt, as under 'the ſovereignty of the order, will ſoon be eſta-'bliſhed by them, even beyond their own power 'to ſhake.

'I have now unboſomed myſelf to my bro-'ther, with all the confidence of ſo near an al-'liance. You will perhaps wonder at my open-'neſs, with one whom I have not ſeen ſince he 'was a child. But I know your character in

'life: and, above all, I know myſelf ſafe from 'being betrayed, becauſe the information would 'not be received.

'Conſider, therefore, whether you will em- 'brace this offer! whether you will reign in a 'ſplendour that would dazzle the eyes of the 'greateſt prince in Europe, or live here in ſla- 'very and dependance! The alternative will 'not admit a moment's heſitation. I ſee you 'yield. I will acquaint our General with it; 'you and your wife ſhall remain here with me, 'till the proper time for all our departure comes, 'which will depend on circumſtances, not yet 'ſettled. In the mean time we ſhall have an 'opportunity of conferring on theſe ſubjects to- 'gether, and preparing all things for our under- 'taking in a manner that ſhall enſure ſuc- 'ceſs.'

Though my maſter made no reply to this propoſal that teſtified the leaſt diſapprobation of it, I could eaſily ſee that many parts of the ſcheme affected him with the ſtrongeſt abhorrence. At the ſame time that the offer of royalty was a temptation which ſhook his reſolution, and almoſt vanquiſhed his virtue.

His brother ſaw the conflict in his heart with pleaſure: had he yielded readily and without reluctance, he ſhould have withdrawn his confidence from ſuch a depravity of ſoul; and the ſtruggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman, who deliberates between virtue and vice, is loſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhew the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.*

THE Jeſuit the next evening reſumed the converſation, and to remove every doubt of ſucceſs that might deter his brother from joining in his deſigns, proceeded thus.

'My brother, (ſaid he) there is nothing ſo 'diſguſting to a rational man as the miſtakes and 'blunders which paſſion, prejudice, pride and 'ignorance produce in the conduct of all the 'courts in the world, even ours at *Rome* not be-'ing quite exempt from them, though the freeſt 'of all others. As for this of *Vienna*, it is, at 'preſent, a ſcene, where every abſurd, every 'deſtructive paſſion rules.--- Among theſe muſt 'you ſeek for the ſources of the preſent war, that 'lays all *Germany* waſte: Female pride, piqued 'by ſome ſlighting expreſſions, from one eſteem-'ed inferior in rank, and ſtimulated by a deſire 'of recovering by ſurprize, what had been 'yielded, or rather extorted by treaty, influenc-'ed this ſagacious court, in conjunction with 'that of *Saxony*, to form deſigns againſt the 'king of *Bulgaria*: but the vigilance of that 'monarch prevented their deſigns, of which he 'had timely notice, and before their ſchemes 'were ripe for execution, he boldly attacked

'them, and ſo anticipated the blow meditated 'againſt him.

'So daring a ſtep ſurprized all *Europe*, and 'influenced many who were unacquainted with 'the motives of it, to take part againſt him, 'while more did for private advantage.---Of 'theſe *France* was the firſt; who concluding a 'league with her ancient enemy, in deſpight of 'family animoſity, has entered into a war, that 'ſeems not to concern her at all; nor indeed 'does it in the obvious conſequences of it, but 'ſhe has farther deſigns in view, and in return 'for the aſſiſtance ſhe gives to cruſh this prince, 'is to receive from the houſe of *Auſtria* theſe 'dominions in the *Netherlands*, which have coſt 'the greateſt part of *Europe* ſuch deluges of 'blood, for above a century, to keep out of her 'hands: while this court, inattentive to the 'conſequences that muſt attend *France*'s getting 'poſſeſſion of theſe long-conteſted places, has 'blindly, baſely entered into a league with a fa-'mily that has been labouring her ruin for ſo 'many ages, and betrayed the confidence of all 'the ſtates, who have ſupported her in them.--- 'The other nations who have acceded to this 'alliance, have acted from motives merely mer-'cenary in the firſt view, fighting for the pay 'promiſed them by the *Imperial* and *French* 'courts, the latter of whom has ſtretched her 'generoſity ſo far, as to undertake ſupporting 'her new ally with money as well as men.

'But it is not improbable, that they may all 'be diſappointed, and the king of *Bulgaria* not 'only eſcape the ruin meditated againſt him, 'but alſo retort it on the machinators; one of 'the principal of whom, the *Saxon*, has already

'had

'had abundant cauſe to repent of his undertak-
'ing. As for this court, it now fights *pro aris*
'*& focis*, as may be ſaid, for if that hero is
'victorious, nothing leſs is to be expected here,
'than the total loſs of the imperial dignity, of
'whoſe authority there want not many inſtances
'of the moſt flagrant abuſe, to vindicate ſuch a
'revolution.

'But of all the effects of this unnatural com-
'bination, there is not one more baſe than the
'ingratitude with which this court has behaved
'to that of *England*, whoſe blood and treaſure
'have often ſupported it againſt the very power
'of *France*, when every other human aſſiſtance
'had deſerted it; and eſtabliſhed it in its preſent
'grandeur, almoſt at the price of its own ruin.
'---- But now all thoſe benefits are forgot, and
'becauſe *England* will not tamely look on, (if
'not perhaps aſſiſt) to ſee the fabrick, which ſhe
'has erected at ſo vaſt an expence, overturned
'to gratify a blind caprice, and a prince allied
'to her by blood and intereſt, ſacrificed to avarice
'and pride, all her former ſervices are held as
'cancelled, and herſelf treated with the rancour
'of the greateſt enemy.

'While *England*, thus ſupports her character
'of generoſity and acts with prudence; the
'*Dutch*, as if infatuated, ſtand quietly to ſee the
'*barrier*, which coſt themſelves even, ſo much
'in erecting for their defence, thus, given away
'to the very power againſt whom it was erected;
'and who, they cannot be inſenſible, means
'nothing leſs than their ruin, as ſoon as it can
'ſtrike the blow, to effect. But ſuch is the de-
'generacy of that people, from every ſentiment
'of virtue, publick and private, that they will

'not

'not give up the opportunity of preſent gain, to 'ſave their ſtate from ſo evident, ſo imminent 'ruin; vainly perhaps expecting that *England* 'will ſtill purſue the ſchemes of *knight-errantry*, 'which have ſo long made her fight the quarrels 'of her neighbours, while they themſelves look-'ed on almoſt as if unconcerned in the event; 'and will be moved by the cries of the *diſtreſſed* '*ſtates*, to remedy the miſtakes, and repair the 'loſſes of their *High-Mightineſſes*.

'While every other ſtate in *Europe* is thus 'employed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the 'advantages of peace, prudently taking no part 'in a war which does not in the leaſt concern 'them. Of theſe, the former, like the old lion 'in the fable, is only terrible to ignorant ap-'prehenſion, on account of what it has been, 'and is now pacifick and harmleſs, becauſe it no 'longer has the power of doing harm. Senſible 'of this weakneſs, it ſleeps in the ſhadow of a 'mighty name, and mixes not in diſputes which 'muſt only draw it into difficulties, without any 'proſpect of advantage to engage it in the at-'tempt. But it muſt not be let to enjoy this 'ſtate of tranquillity ſo contrary to our deſigns 'any longer; and as the preſent government 'there is determined to perſiſt in the meaſures 'that ſupport it, it muſt be overturned to make 'way for thoſe who will be more obedient to 'our advice.

'A method which we muſt alſo purſue with '*Portugal*; for though its ſtrength is almoſt be-'neath the rank of an independant, much leſs a 'royal ſtate, yet upon the account of its wealth, 'which might hire forces to oppreſs us, it muſt 'be worked up, to take the ſame ſtep, and break

'with

'with *England*, as I have ſaid before, to which 'it has already made large advances, by ſeveral 'moſt unjuſt, and injudicious encroachments, 'on the trade of that nation.

'As for the war between *France* and *England*, 'it ariſes ſolely from the contradiction between 'the intereſts of the two nations, which nature 'has ſet in an oppoſition impoſſible to be recon-'ciled. But the ſeat of this war is ſo remote 'from hence, that it would have no influence 'on the affairs of *Europe*, did not the ſucceſſes of 'the *Engliſh* prevent *France* from giving the aſ-'ſiſtance that was expected, and might be ef-'fectual to the deſigns of this court, for they 'have ſo abſolutely ruined her trade, that ſhe is 'no longer able to fulfil her engagements with '*Ruſſia* particularly, and the ſeveral courts of *Ger-'many*, whom ſhe undertook to pay, for fight-'ing the quarrel of her ally; ſo that the former 'who had no other motive but the money, for 'entering into the war at firſt, will of courſe, 'and the latter muſt of neceſſity, deſert that 'cauſe, not having any internal ſupport of their 'own, ſince this has failed them. Indeed the '*Ruſſians*, finding all the mighty promiſes which 'were made them, vaniſh into air, begin to be 'ſick of their bargain already, and long again for 'the ſolid advantages of their alliance with *Eng-'land*. As for this court, it is now making its 'laſt effort, and if this is eluded or defeated, it 'has no other reſource, than ſhamefully to re-'ceive the law from a prince, upon whom it 'made ſo unjuſt an attempt.'

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

'THIS ſhort but diſtinct view of the preſent 'ſituation of the affairs of *Europe* muſt con- 'vince you, that a general peace muſt ſoon be 'concluded, the parties that would, not being 'able to, continue the war much longer; and 'therefore *we* muſt be ſpeedy in the execution of 'our deſigns, or the opportunity will be loſt, for 'it would be impoſſible to make even the pride 'of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the 'meaſures we want, at a time when *England* is 'diſingaged from other enemies. I have drawn 'this ſketch to ſhew you, that *our* deſigns are not 'raſhly undertaken, but the reſult of the deepeſt 'knowledge and inſight into things. This muſt 'remove every ſcruple that may ariſe from doubt 'of ſucceſs. ---- But there is one thing more, 'which muſt be explained, to remove prejudices 'of another nature, which may perhaps repre- 'ſent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; 'and this is to evince the juſtice of it, and of 'the means deſigned to accompliſh its ſucceſs.---

'Of this matter you muſt not pretend to 'judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by de- 'ſign, upon the ignorance of the world, and 'which no wiſe man obſerves, who has it in his

'power

'power to break them with impunity.--- Man is 'thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his 'own happineſs, by every means within his 'power: this is too ſublime a truth for vulgar 'knowledge, as it would put an end to the de-'luſion, by which the wiſe few keep the herd of 'mankind in ignorance and ſubjection.

'But that it is really the truth, and as ſuch 'made the rule of action, by all the ſtates and 'princes in the world, will not be denied, nor 'even doubted by any one, who has conſidered 'the ſyſtems of policy and government, which 'are, and ever have been, eſtabliſhed by them.

'For if it was not an undoubted maxim, that 'power conſtitutes the rule of juſtice, how in-'conſiſtent would be the actions of all mankind? 'How could a ſtate deviſe laws to puniſh the 'man with death, who goes into his neigh-'bour's field, and ſteals his ox, and, at the 'ſame time, ſend armies to invade, ſpoil, and 'depopulate the territories of their neighbours? 'How could a poor pirate be hanged for rob-'bing a ſingle ſhip, and fleets immediately after 'ſent avowedly to deſtroy the whole trade of the 'ſame nation? If a ſtate of war is alledged, 'that is the very impoſition of which I ſpoke. 'Every man has as good a *natural* right to de-'clare war with his neighbour, as the ſtate, he 'lives in, has with another ſtate; and every 'right that is not natural, is an uſurpation, and 'void. This is the true philoſophy of life, ſtrip-'ped of the idle dreams of enthuſiaſm, and ſelfiſh 'miſrepreſentations of deſign.

'As for religion, look over the whole race of 'mankind, and try if you can find one who 'practiſes what he profeſſes: this is an incon-

'teſtable

'teſtable proof, that none believe it; as it is alſo 'that there is no neceſſity they ſhould, elſe 'would the want of faith and obedience be pu-'niſhed, by that power which is thought to en-'join them; whereas, on the contrary, it is al-'ways moſt ſucceſsful, as it affords means, which 'thoſe reſtraints forbid. I obſerved that in the be-'ginning of our converſation on this ſubject, you 'ſeemed ſhocked at my mentioning the neceſſity 'of removing the perſons who oppoſe our de-'ſigns, and particularly when I ſaid, the *Spa-'niard* had ſwallowed his death. But this is all 'prejudice, and want of extending your view 'beyond the ſurface of things.

'For how much better is the method we take, 'of ſtriking the ſingle perſon againſt whom our 'deſign is levelled, than that purſued, not only 'without reproach, but even encouraged by 'applauſe, of involving the innocent with the 'guilty, (innocent I mean in reſpect to us) and 'laying waſte whole nations to bring a prince to 'death? How much better would it have been 'for this court to have removed the king of *Bul-'garia* by poiſon, or a dagger, than to have de-'ſtroyed millions, as they have done in the pur-'ſuit of his death, by this deſtructive war? This 'is demonſtration! this is conviction to him 'who dares open his Eyes to ſee it! Judge now 'of *our* undertaking by this invariable ſyſtem, 'and ſhew me one objection to it.'

This long diſſertation was not delivered at one time; it was the ſubſtance of many converſations, by which the Jeſuit ſo wrought upon his brother, that he reſigned himſelf wholly to his diſpoſal, and entered ſincerely into his deſigns.

The

The only objection he made, (and that was not urged againſt him) was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the ſociety, the prejudice of education being ſtill ſo ſtrong with him, that he could not yet abſtract things ſo nicely, as to conſider aſſaſſination, in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this ſtate of ſpeculation about a week, for my maſter never ſtirred out, as he made ſickneſs his excuſe for quitting the ſervice, when his brother having occaſion for ſome money to ſend to *Liſbon*, on the grand deſign, the bag in which I was, was ordered for that ſervice; the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.--- I now changed my maſter again, and ſet out for *Liſbon*, in the poſſeſſion of one of the ſociety, who was to deliver us to a particular perſon there.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of* GERMANY. *A ſhort view of the war between the* FRENCH *and* ENGLISH, *with the motives of the former for tranſferring the ſeat of it, into* GERMANY. *Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment.*

IN ſo complicated an undertaking, there neceſſarily muſt be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whoſe motions depends the ſucceſs of the whole. The perſon, by whom I was ſent to *Liſbon*, was not to go directly thither; but to take a large circuit, and call at ſeveral places, in his way, to ſee that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy ſhould not defeat the deſign a ſecond time.

It is not neceſſary to recount all the circumſtances of this tour, which, for the moſt part, were no more than the common occurrences, upon ſuch occaſions; I ſhall, therefore, take notice only of ſuch few, as for their ſingularity, and importance, may deſerve attention. As to the ſecret motive of the journey (for that alledged was only to inſpect, as uſual, into the private concerns of the order) it has been already ſo well explained, that it is ſufficient to ſay, every thing exceeded

exceeded expectation, and gave the ſtrongeſt aſſurance of ſucceſs.

As the war had overſpread all *Germany*, it was impoſſible for my maſter to avoid falling in, with ſome of the armies, which were then in the field; but this gave him no concern: He was bleſſed with one of thoſe ready geniuſes, that can put on any appearance, ſo naturally, as to deceive ſuſpicion itſelf; beſide, that he had paſſports, under one character, or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The firſt event, worth remark, that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and it's operations in general have been ſufficiently explained before) was in the army of the allies of the king of *Bulgaria*, into which my maſter entered, in the character of a Jewiſh agent. This army was compoſed of the forces of ſeveral of the ſmaller *German* ſtates, (who were hired by the *Engliſh*, to defend their own liberties) a ſmall number of *Bulgarians*, and a conſiderable body of *Engliſh* troops.

You are ſurprized to hear, that people ſhould require to be paid to fight for themſelves, in ſo intereſting a cauſe: but ſo it is; and ſo it will continue to be, while a number of little ſovereigns aſſume the ſtate, and live in the luxury of the greateſt kings; for as their own revenues are inſufficient to ſupport the expence, they will be ready to ſell themſelves, to the firſt that offers, for an immediate ſupply, without looking forward to, or regarding the conſequences of, ſuch inconſiderate, ſuch wretched venality. They have, indeed, this excuſe, which the general depravity of mankind ſeems to juſtify their alledging, that as their

their ruin would involve greater ſtates, in ſome inconveniencies, they find theſe will rather ſubmit to this groſs impoſition, than ſuffer them to be ſwallowed up, by others, who would grow too powerful, by this accretion.

Baſe, as ſuch a proſtitution of principle muſt appear, it has been ſo ſucceſsfully practiſed, (and this not by thoſe poorer princes alone; the *Auſtrians* and *Spaniards* occaſionally, and the *Dutch* conſtantly availing themſelves of it,) that *England* in particular has been drawn in, to bear a part, from which by her ſituation ſhe ſeemed exempted by heaven, in every war, that has diſtracted *Europe*, for ſome ages, to an expence of blood and treaſure, which is already ſeverely felt, and muſt, if purſued much farther, involve it in the very ruin, it thus ſtrives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent it's being applied, till the evil itſelf ſhall work it's own redreſs; a period, that to human foreſight ſeems not far diſtant at preſent. This is taking away the power of thoſe petty tyrants, who diſgrace the name of ſovereigns, and uniting their territories, into one ſtate, of ſtrength ſufficient to ſupport itſelf. For while thoſe princes have any power left, they will conſiſtently with their preſent ſyſtems of policy oppoſe this; but the manner in which they have conducted themſelves, in this war, if not ſpeedily altered, will ſo effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to reſiſt, but muſt paſſively ſubmit to the dominion, of whoever will undertake their ſupport: an event as much to be deſired by their own immediate ſubjects, as by the other ſtates, which thus ſuffer, by their abſurd, and

ini-

iniquitous conduct; as the ſevereſt form of one government is preferable to the capricious rule, of ſeveral tyrants, whoſe poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the moſt of their wretched people, without any regard, to the eſtabliſhed rules of juſtice, or even the common rights of humanity. The uſual objection to this expedient, of it's overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make ſo great a noiſe about, is of no weight; that boaſted liberty being, at preſent, no more, than the power of thoſe ſovereigns, to treat their ſubjects as they pleaſe, with impunity, the reſtraining of which, within juſt bounds, would really be eſtabliſhing, not overturning the liberty of mankind.

As to the war, in which the *Engliſh* were at this time engaged, it was not to be aſcribed ſolely, to this cauſe. The inſatiable ambition of the *French* had prompted them to ſtrive for the enlargement of their territories, in *America*, where they already poſſeſſed an hundred times more, than they were able to make any uſe of. The poſſeſſions of the *Engliſh*, in that part of the globe, were alſo uſeleſsly extenſive; however, the boundaries having been ſettled between them, uſurpations were not to be tolerated, conſiſtently with the honour of the ſtate; beſide, if they were taken no notice of, in the beginning, they might in time poſſibly be extended, to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between thoſe powerful and jealous neighbours, the ſeat of which was properly transferred by the *Engliſh*, to the place, in which the attack had been made upon them; where the ſuperiority of their naval force, gave them ſuch advantages, that they not only recovered

vered the places, which had been taken from them, but alſo abſolutely overturned the *French* power, in thoſe boundleſs regions, and purſued their conqueſts, in every other part of the world, where the *French* had made ſettlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power, and trade.

As it was impoſſible for the *French*, to recover theſe loſſes, directly, and the ambition and avarice, which firſt gave occaſion to the war, was now ſtrengthened by pride, to prevent their making the conceſſions, on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the ſeat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was ſo inſeparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their aſſiſtance, in expectation of having all their own loſſes reſtored, in return for theſe territories, if they could get poſſeſſion of them, which the number of their own land-forces, and the alliances they knew they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hopes of accompliſhing; a ſcheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and juſtice obliged the *Engliſh* to protect, and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus ſolely upon their account. As the *French* at the ſame time, that they made this attack, had alſo entered into the confederacy, againſt the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this neceſſarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* ſtill cloſer, and made him join, as many of his troops, as he could poſſibly ſpare, to the army raiſed by the *Engliſh*, upon this indiſpenſible occaſion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented their joining their forces,

to

to the number of his enemies; beſide a conſiderable aſſiſtance, in money, to enable him to ſupport his own troops.

It was neceſſary for me, to give you this ſhort explanation of the nature of this war, though ſuch digreſſions are contrary to my deſign and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgement of the extraordinary occurrences, I am going to relate to you.

The army, through which my maſter was obliged to paſs, as I have ſaid, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it compoſed of *Britains*, was commanded by a *German* General, in diſgraceful acknowledgement of the want of military merit equal to ſuch a charge, in the natives: though to palliate the diſgrace, and ſatisfy the jealouſy of the *Engliſh*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and ſubject only to their own laws, in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of neceſſity to obey the *German* commander, in chief.

Such diſtinctions create animoſities, often more prejudicial, than the inconvenience they were meant to prevent. Accuſtomed to live in the moſt luxurious plenty and eaſe, and valuing themſelves upon the riches of their country, which ſupported the whole army, the *Engliſh* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with whom they were joined, with contempt, who in return, affected to deſpiſe their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country to give ſuch impreſſions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them

them in proviſions, with that care and chearfulneſs which their prompt and generous payment deſerved; by which means, they ſuffered the inconveniencies of ſcarcity, and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though ſuch feuds among the men threatened the moſt dangerous conſequences, thoſe whoſe authority ought to put a ſtop to them, were far from ſtriving to reſtore that harmony, which alone could give ſucceſs to their deſigns. The commander in chief either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of thoſe miſunderſtandings; and the *Engliſh* commander, ambitious probably of the ſupreme command, which he imagined he might eaſily obtain, if he could make the other ſufficiently obnoxious to the *Engliſh*, inflamed them, by every artifice he could uſe.

Nor did he ſtop here: whenever he was ſummoned in conſequence of his high ſtation, for he was ſecond in command, in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his conſtant practice to contradict, whatever was propoſed by the commander, and to treat all his ſchemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himſelf, in their place; and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful ſpeaker, and perfectly verſed in the theory of war, whereas the commander was a thoughtful, reſerved man, of few words, whoſe whole life had been ſpent in action, and who could more eaſily have executed than explained his deſigns.

The conſequences of this diſagreement were very detrimental while it laſted, and muſt in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to diſcuſs the affair, with his worthy antagoniſt, written directly to the *Britiſh* ſovereign, to inform him, that he was ſo conſtantly oppoſed, in all his deſigns, by the *Engliſh* General, that it was impoſſible for him to do any thing of moment; wherefore he deſired either that he might have leave to reſign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious, and dangerous oppoſition; concluding his letter with theſe remarkable words. --- 'Though in a multitude of counſellors there 'is ſaid to be much ſafety; yet in the operations 'of war, if many are privy to the councils which 'direct them, there never can be that ſecrecy, 'agreement, and diſpatch, which are indiſpen-'ſibly neceſſary to ſucceſs.'-------

The monarch, who was no ſtranger to the captious, and unquiet diſpoſition of the *Engliſh* General, was ſenſible of the juſtice of the *German*'s complaint, and immediately removed the cauſe of it, by giving him an unlimited power, to carry on the war, as ſhould appear beſt to his own private judgment, without conſulting with, or being liable to be oppoſed by, any other perſon.

It may be thought that the entire removal of the *Engliſh* General would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *Engliſh* government made this not quite ſo proper; as he was deſcended from one of the moſt illuſtrious and powerful families, in the kingdom, and a member of the ſenate, in which his talent for ſpeaking gave him ſuch weight, that it was judged beſt, to avoid giving him

cauſe, for exerting his abilities, in oppoſition to the meaſures of the government, by removing him from an employment, which he had ſollicited, with all his power and intereſt; eſpecially, as the immenſe expence of this army began to make the people uneaſy, and ready to receive any impreſſion againſt it. But the event ſhewed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made uſe of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* General received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his ſchemes, without ever conſulting any perſon, or even communicating the leaſt hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he ſent his orders, with the peremptory preciſion of an abſolute ſovereign. This was a ſevere ſtroke upon the *Engliſh* General, who had been accuſtomed to canvaſs the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook ſuch ſubordination, to a perſon, whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his underſtanding. However, as it was in vain to diſpute, he obeyed in ſullen ſilence, reſolved to ſeize the firſt opportunity of defeating his meaſures, ſince he could no longer diſconcert his councils; and to take hold of the leaſt miſcarriage, to attack him, in the *Britiſh* ſenate, at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not, but he ſhould be able to repreſent things in ſuch a light, as to have him removed from the command, which muſt of courſe devolve upon himſelf.

This account, my maſter received, from a jeſuit the very night he arrived at the camp, who to ingratiate the ſociety the more effectually with the

the *French* king, and ſecure his intereſt, and protection, ſhould any unforeſeen accident defeat their deſign, had entered into the ſervice of the *Engliſh* General, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of diſcovering the ſchemes of the allies, which he gave conſtant intelligence of, to their enemies.

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit, it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy ENGLISH *ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.*

THE very morning after my maſter's arrival in the camp, an event happened that aſtoniſhed all *Europe*. The *French* army was ſo greatly ſuperior to that of the allies, that the General was obliged to be entirely upon the defenſive, nor had his conſummate experience, and indefatigable aſſiduity been able to prevent their taking ſeveral advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that ſeemed to threaten the loſs of the country, he was to defend. But through all theſe difficulties, he perſiſted ſteadily, in his own plan, and preſerved his attention cool and ready to take any advantage, that might offer.

Accordingly that morning, upon notice of ſome motions of the enemy, that indicated a deſign of attacking him, he ordered a ſmall, but ſelect body of forces, almoſt all of them *Engliſh*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, while he ſhould make a proper diſpoſition of the reſt of his army to give the enemy battle, or make a ſecure retreat, as he ſhould ſee expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of thoſe few brave troops ſoon changed the face of the affair; for not content with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with ſuch irreſiſtible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confuſion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have ſaid before, that the tranſactions in a battle, are ſo complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impoſſible to reduce them into the regularity of a ſatisfactory deſcription; I ſhall therefore, enter no farther into the account of this, than juſt as it concerns the conduct of the *Engliſh* General, which I had a ſufficient opportunity of obſerving, my maſter having placed himſelf near his perſon, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops, which he had ordered to march toward the enemy, he ſent to the *Engliſh* General, who commanded all the horſe, in that wing, to advance and ſuſtain them. It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, when a meſſenger from the General, informed him, that a part of the army was engaged, in the plain, that lay before him, and ordered him

to

to march the cavalry, under his command, to their aſſiſtance. Surprize, and reſentment, at ſuch a meaſure's being taken, without his having the leaſt previous notice of it, almoſt deprived him of his reaſon; but he recovered himſelf in a moment, and drawing his ſword, with an air of indignation and diſcontent, was juſt preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another meſſenger arrived, and delivered them, but with ſome variation.

This, the General inſtantly perceived, and reſolved to take advantage of, to juſtify his obeying neither, in hopes, by that means, to accompliſh his ſcheme of defeating the meaſures of his commander, without any regard to the conſequences, that muſt attend ſuch a conduct. Accordingly, inſtead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate, with the meſſengers, about this difference in their orders, and finding each poſitive in thoſe he delivered, he coolly determined to go himſelf to the General, for an explanation of them, by trifling away the critical moment, in which manner, he expected that the part of the allied army, which was engaged, would be beaten, for want of a proper and timely ſupport, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and ſaving the whole army, from a defeat, and the pleaſure of effectually ruining the character of the General, by attributing the whole misfortune, to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his deſigns to them in proper time.

Such a ſcheme was but too likely to ſucceed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus deſigned to have ſacrificed to his ambition, and reſentment, diſappointed it, be-

yond all human probability, as I have obſerved before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext, to abandon them to ruin.

The ſituation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the General, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than deſcribed. The cool diſtant reception he met with, gave him notice of the ſtorm, which was ready to burſt over his head: and he ſaw, that the ſcheme he had laid ſo deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accuſations, which he had intended to bring againſt his General, would now recoil upon himſelf, with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the General next morning publickly paſſed an implicite cenſure on his conduct, which he ſaw received with ſuch univerſal approbation, that he thought it proper, to reſign his command, for fear of perſonal inſult, from the incenſed ſoldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt, but the intereſt of his family, and his own eloquence and addreſs, would vindicate his character, at leaſt, if not ſtill accompliſh his deſigns, againſt the General.

Though I loſt ſight of him, at this time, yet as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of this whole affair, I think it better, and leſs trouble to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The firſt conſtruction which was put upon his conduct was that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to thoſe under his command gave no ſmall weight to,

to, from this generally juſt maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*; and which many inſignificant parts of his former conduct were alledged to confirm; but I have ſhewn, that it ſprung from another, much leſs juſtifiable cauſe; I ſay, leſs juſtifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for than for his being born blind, or lame; but ſuch a ſcheme, as his, was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackeſt circumſtances.

The firſt conſequence of his quitting the army, was a perfect harmony, between the *Engliſh* and *Germans*; the glory, they had acquired, upon this occaſion, raiſing the ſpirits of the former ſo high, that they thought no more of the inconveniences they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved; and entered into friendſhip, with their fellow ſoldiers, as if there had never been any jealouſy between them; who on the other hand were ſo ſtruck, with their gallant behaviour, and ſo ſenſible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accuſed them of improper delicacy, or ſtrove to do them ill offices, with the natives of the country, as before. But what compleated the happineſs of the *Engliſh* was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirſt for glory, under their preſent commander, by giving them the poſt of honour, upon all occaſions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which they eſteemed a ſufficient recompence for the ſevereſt fatigues, and dangers: an indulgence, which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always oppoſed their being ex-

poſed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater conſequence, than the reſt of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not do any ſervice.

As ſoon, as the late General arrived in *England*, his ſovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many very lucrative, and honourable employments, and diſmiſſed him his ſervice; an inſtance of clemency which few other princes would have ſhewn, and which regard to the merits of his illuſtrious anceſtors alone procured for him.

But ſo far was he from having a proper ſenſe of this lenity; or acquieſcing in the ſentence of his ſovereign, that he loudly aſſerted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the aſſurance of conſcious innocence.

This was the higheſt inſult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his juſtice, and queſtioned his power in the tendereſt point; however, he ſcorned to take any advantage of it, but waiving every perſonal reſentment, condeſcended to grant the trial demanded; but with this expreſs declaration, that as it was at the inſtance of the party, and without any legal neceſſity, he ſhould abide by the ſentence of his judges, be it what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight, for the General was well adviſed, before he ſollicited the trial, that according to the laws of the country, he was exempted, from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as they only made a *Briton* ſubject to military law, by which he muſt be tried;

tried; and this exemption was the real reaſon of his being ſo eager for a trial.

But though his life might be out of danger by this ſubterfuge, the trial compleated the ruin of his character, beyond all poſſibility of recovery; as upon the moſt impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious conſequences of it, by the loſs of ſo favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war, by that means, appeared ſo plainly, that the juſtice of his being diſmiſſed the ſervice, was not only aſſerted, but he was alſo declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell, a ſecond time, a victim to his own ſchemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cauſe of his ruin, as ſoon as the circumſtances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the General loſt the glory, which in the firſt emotions of joy and admiration had been ſo laviſhly heaped upon him for it; and it was juſtly aſcribed to accident, as human foreſight could not poſſibly have formed any plan, for ſuch an improbable inſtance of bravery, as that which obtained it.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* BRUSSELS. *The great ſource of Jeſuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleaſure, and a lady of faſhion. Their hiſtory concluded in character.*

AS ſoon as the confuſion of ſuch an event was a little over; and my maſter thought he could travel in ſafety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I ſaid, he had borne there, purſued his journey to *Bruſſels*, in his own, where he was to receive farther inſtructions; for though *the great deſign* was carried on, by every member of the ſociety, yet the real ſecret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whoſe orders the reſt obeyed with an implicit exactneſs, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the ſubjects of any ſovereign upon earth, ſince the days of *the old man of the mountain.*

It was ſome time, before theſe inſtructions arrived; which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, inſignificant court, by my maſter's intimacy with the confeſſor of the Governor, who beſide the advantage of that character, to gain information, was himſelf a man of pleaſure, in the moſt extenſive ſenſe of the phraſe, and utterly free from every reſtraint of principle that could oppoſe it's gratification; though he had the addreſs to maintain the dignity of his ſtation, by his ſecrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There

There is nothing that contributes ſo much to the influence, which the Jeſuits poſſeſs over the minds of the people, as their knowledge of the ſecret hiſtory of their lives. To acquire this, they ſtop at nothing; they aſſume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every ſcene of vicious pleaſure, where reſerve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears, without diſguiſe. Such an opportunity of information therefore was not to be miſſed. Accordingly the evening after my maſter's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themſelves, in a convenient ſituation, to ſee all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being over-heard; ſuch as were meerly political, I ſhall omit, as I am ſick of ſuch a ſtupid ſubject, and only take notice of thoſe, which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.---- 'Obſerve that little, mean-looking, ill-'favoured perſon,' (ſaid the confeſſor, continuing a converſation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) 'who acts as maſter of the ceremonies. 'You ſee his feeble frame is quite worn out with 'debauchery, and he nods over the grave in an-'ticipated old age, yet ſtill he affects an air of 'levity, and youth, and ſtrives to inflame others, 'by his diſcourſe, to vices, which he is no longer 'able to participate of himſelf: but this is all 'grimace, and he aſſumes this appearance of 'gayety, to hide the gloomy diſcontent, and 'remorſe, that prey upon his heart.'

'There is ſomething ſo particular, in the ſtory 'of this man, that it may be worth while to give 'you a ſhort ſketch of it. He is a native of a 'neighbouring country, where his father, from 'the loweſt ſtate of poverty, amaſſed ſuch wealth,

'in

'in trade, that his vanity prompted him to get 'his family ennobled, to hide the meanneſs of his 'original. There is ſomething ſo abſurdly wrong, 'in purchaſed nobility, that it always turns the 'heads of the purchaſers, perhaps in juſt retribu-'tion, for ſo flagrant an abuſe of an inſtitution, 'meant as a reward for merit. The *ennobled* 'man lived not to ſhew the truth of this obſerva-'tion; but his ſons abundantly made up for 'that, the elder laviſhing his wealth, on every 'kind of expenſive vanity, and the younger, 'the perſon you ſee, glorying in every kind of 'debauchery, as if vice and folly were the pre-'rogatives of their *honour*.

'In the courſe of a life of pleaſure he contract-'ed an acquaintance with that lady, whom you 'ſee at the upper end of the room. Though na-'ture had never meant him for a man of intrigue, 'and debauchery had exhauſted even the little 'powers ſhe gave, he thought it would have 'been inconſiſtent with his character of a man 'of pleaſure, not to commence an affair of gal-'lantry, with ſo deſirable a perſon. Accordingly, 'as ſhe happened to be married, he directly cul-'tivated an intimacy with her huſband, into 'whoſe unguarded confidence he ſo far inſinuat-'ed himſelf, as to receive many acts of friendſhip 'from him. To a man, who had any ſenſe of 'honour, or honeſty, this would have been an 'irreſiſtible reaſon for deſiſting from his baſe 'deſign; but he was above ſuch vulgar reſtraints, 'and genteelly took the opportunity of the huſ-'band's friendſhip to debauch the virtue of the 'wife.

'Nothing but the moſt abandoned profligacy 'in the women could have given ſucceſs to ſuch

'an

'an attempt, as the huſband exceeded the paramour in every natural endowment of mind and perſon, beyond every degree of compariſon; but the caprice of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for: it will loath the moſt exquiſite delicacies, and ſate itſelf on garbage.

'They had not continued their commerce long, when their indiſcretion betrayed them. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and rage of the injured huſband, at the diſcovery! Had it been poſſible, he would have doubted his ſenſes, which were witneſſes to his diſgrace. In the firſt emotions of his rage, he was going to break in upon them, and take the revenge, which his ſuperior ſtrength amply put in his power; but a moment's reflection ſhewed him the folly of ſuch an action, and determined him to take the ſafer and more ſevere revenge of the law.

'Accordingly, he withdrew without being perceived by them, and bringing ſome of his ſervants to teſtify their crimes, as ſoon as he had ſecured the proof neceſſary to obtain his ſatisfaction, entered the room, in the height of their dalliance, and coolly telling them that it would be proper for them to chuſe another ſcene for their pleaſure, beſide his houſe, retired and left them to their meditations.

'This conduct convinced them of his deſign, and that they had not a moment to loſe, to avoid ſome of the moſt diſagreeable conſequences of it: as ſoon, therefore, as they recovered from the firſt impreſſions of their aſtoniſhment, they directly departed together, and concealing the place of their retirement, for fear

'of

'of a purſuit, quitted the territories of the ſtate, 'as ſoon as they poſſibly could.

'But they might have ſpared themſelves, that 'trouble; the revenge which the huſband ſought 'was of another nature: he directly inſtituted a 'ſuit at law, againſt them, by which, as he had 'ſufficient proof of their guilt, he obtained a di-'vorce from his wife, and ſuch damages againſt 'the violator of his bed, as made it impoſſible 'for him ever to return to his country, with-'out he deſigned to languiſh out the reſt of his 'days in a priſon.

'The lovers, in the mean time, were far 'from being happy, in the uninterrupted enjoy-'ment of each other. Variety and the myſtery 'of intrigue were all that tempted them to the 'correſpondence at firſt; and now, that theſe 'were loſt, reflection opened their eyes, to the 'conſequences of their folly, and made them 'look upon each other as the authors of their 'mutual ruin. Such thoughts ſoon cool the moſt 'ardent love; what effect then muſt they have 'upon perſons in their ſituation? However, ne-'ceſſity obliged them to conceal their ſenti-'ments; and as ſoon as the divorce gave them 'liberty, they married, to preſerve the appearance 'of a paſſion, they never felt, and obtain a ſup-'port from their families, which they could not 'have expected on any other terms.

'When this was done, and that neceſſity re-'moved the averſion, which they had long en-'tertained, broke out in the moſt violent man-'ner. They lived in a ſtate of eternal warfare, 'in which, the wife threw off all regard to de-'cency even ſo far as to take advantage of 'her ſuperior ſtrength, and frequently beat

'her

'her feeble huſband. Obſerve that ſcar on his 'upper lip! the third day of their happy mar-'riage, he received that mark of her rage, from 'the heel of her ſlipper, with which ſhe alſo 'beat out two of his teeth, whoſe place he now 'ſupplies, with artificial ones.

'But the viciouſneſs of her inclination, which 'firſt brought him into this wretched ſituation, 'releaſed him from it, ſooner than he deſerved. 'They had fixed their reſidence here; where 'the prince ſoon happened to take a liking to 'her, the firſt overture of which ſhe eagerly 'embraced; and compleated the infamy of her 'character, by quitting her ſecond huſband, to 'become his miſtreſs; in which ſtation you be-'hold her at preſent.

'Though ſuch a diſgrace ſeemed to be a ju-'dicial retaliation upon the huſband, for his 'own baſe crime, he was inſenſible of it; and 'inſtead of taking advantage of his deliverance, 'and returning to ſome place, where his ſhame 'was not known, meanly accepted of the imploy-'ment, in which you ſee him, and ſubmitted to 'be the ſlave of her vice and inſolence.

'But tho' his hatred for her, and paſſion for the pomp, and diſſipation of a court, makehim brave the infamy of ſuch a ſituation, ſickneſs, 'the conſtant conſequence of debauchery, the 'faithful monitor of guilt, has awoke his con-'ſcience to a ſenſe of the crime that has ſunk 'him ſo low, and raiſed a remorſe, that waſtes 'his life, tho' he thus abſurdly ſtrives to drown 'it's voice, in the noiſe of vanity and vice.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

The confeſſor entertains CHRYSAL'*s maſter with another, not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general conſequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.*

MY maſter was beginning to make ſome obvious reflections, on this account, but his friend ſoon diverted his attention to another object. 'Obſerve' (ſaid he, pointing to a perſon, who bore all the external marks of nobility, in his habit and appearance) 'a ſtriking proof of 'the inſignificance of being born to wealth, and 'honours! Who, that ſees the deſpicable figure, 'which this man makes here, a voluntary exile 'from his own country, where his rank and 'fortune placed him, in the moſt exalted, and 'advantageous light, can ever throw away 'a moment's thought, on heaping up riches, 'or obtaining honours, to perpetuate his name, 'and aggrandize his family, the folly and pro-'fuſion of a ſingle member of which may thus 'diſappoint his hopes, and make his very virtues 'an aggravation of his own degeneracy and re-'proach?

'In a rank, ſcarce inferior to that of a ſo-'vereign, and poſſeſſed of a fortune, ſufficient 'to ſupport it, with dignity to himſelf, and be-'nefit to the community, did this man enter

'into

'into life; but a few years of the diſſipation of 'what is falſely called a life of pleaſure diſtreſſed 'his fortune, and debaſed his principles to ſuch a 'degree, that he was obliged, and not aſhamed 'to have recourſe to the mean method of a mer-'cenary marriage, to retrieve his affairs, and 'enable him to ſupport the external appearance 'of his character.

'The conſtant conſequences of ſuch mar-'riages, might be ſufficient to open the eyes of 'the unhappy victims of them to ſuch a danger-'ous folly; but vanity poſſeſſes ſo abſolute em-'pire over the female heart, that nothing can 'prevent the gratification of it.

'The female, whom this perſon pitched up-'on, as proper for his purpoſe, by her immenſe 'wealth, was deſtitute of every charm of mind 'and perſon, to attract or preſerve love or eſteem. 'But few are ſenſible of their own deficien-'cies, or can bear to be informed of them. On 'his making the firſt overture to her, all her real 'friends took the alarm; they drew his cha-'racter, in proper colours; they ſhewed her, 'that neceſſity, not inclination, was the motive 'of his addreſſes, and they laid the inevitable 'conſequences of a connection with ſuch a per-'ſon, before her in the ſtrongeſt light: but all 'was in vain! Her heart was fixed upon rank 'and precedence, and ſo ſhe could obtain them, 'ſhe left the reſt to chance.

'Accordingly, as ſhe was abſolutely her own 'miſtreſs, the match was ſoon made, to the pre-'ſent ſatisfaction of both parties. He got her 'fortune, to pay his debts, and purſue his plea-'ſures; and ſhe rode in a coach, with coronets, 'and was called *her Grace*.

'But

'But this mutual happineſs did not laſt long: 'the moment he got poſſeſſion of her fortune, 'all his wiſhes were fulfilled; and as he had 'nothing farther to expect, he did not think it 'neceſſary for him, to continue any appearances 'of love, or even complaiſance, for an object 'really diſagreeable to him. Accordingly the 'very morning after his marriage, he ſet out, 'upon a party of pleaſure, with ſome of his 'former companions; and left the bride, by her-'ſelf, to receive the compliments, and go through 'the farce, uſual upon ſuch occaſions.

'Though ſuch behaviour muſt appear baſe, 'and ungenerous to the laſt degree; yet ſhe 'had no right to complain of it; as ſhe could 'not expect any other from his known character, 'and motives for marriage; ſhe, therefore, put 'the beſt face on the matter, and whether 'from intoxication, at her elevation, or in-'difference to him, ſeemed to be inſenſible of 'the ſlight, and went through the ceremony and 'parade, with all the appearance of pleaſure 'and content, leaving him to purſue his own 'inclinations, without moleſtation, or com-'plaint.

'But this calm did not hold long. As ſoon 'as her new dignity loſt the charms of novelty, 'nature awoke, as from a dream, and con-'vinced her, that ſomething more than empty 'ſhow, was neceſſary to human happineſs: but 'alas! this conviction came too late; and all 'her expoſtulations were as ineffectual to induce 'the tenderneſs or eſteem of her huſband, as thoſe 'of her friends had been with her, to prevent 'her marrying him. On the contrary, they

'turned

'turned his indifference into averſion, and made 'him treat her with indignity and contempt, 'inſulting her deformity, and ridiculing the va-'nity, that had prompted her to ſacrifice her 'fortune, for a bare title.

'Hard as ſuch treatment was to be ſubmitted 'to, ſhe had no redreſs; but was obliged to bear 'it, in ſilence, without even the poor conſola-'tion of compaſſion to mitigate her ſufferings. 'At length, a farther aggravation of her wrongs 'gave her the pleaſure of revenge, by driving 'him again into the diſtreſſes, from which her 'folly had relieved him.

'In the purſuit of pleaſure, to which he had 'ſacrificed his character, and fortune, he never 'had even the excuſe of a refined taſte, or par-'ticular paſſion to palliate his folly, but blindly 'followed the example of his companions, or 'was a ſlave to every groſs impulſe of his own 'caprice, without the leaſt notion of delicacy, 'or even decency to direct him. As he was 'ſtroling alone about his own houſe, one unhappy 'evening, when he had no company to divert 'his thoughts, he happened, juſt as it grew 'dark, to overhear two perſons, a male and fe-'male, in earneſt converſation. Curioſity prompt-'ing him to liſten, he ſoon diſcovered that 'love was the ſubject of their diſcourſe, in 'which the man, whom, by his voice, he knew 'to be one of his huntſman's helpers, was ſo 'ſucceſsful that he perſuaded the fair one, to 'promiſe him a meeting, half an hour after, in 'the dog-kennel.

'Though the place of aſſignation might have 'deterred any perſon, whoſe ſenſes, as well as 'his inclinations were not totally debauched,

'from

'from attempting to ſupplant the happy lover, 'the novelty of ſuch an adventure made his 'lordſhip overlook that, and reſolve to ſupply 'his dog-boy's place. Accordingly, he retired 'unperceived, and going into the ſtables, order-'ed him to be called, and ſent him directly on a 'meſſage, ſome miles off, without giving him 'an opportunity of letting his miſtreſs know any 'thing of the matter.'

'As ſoon as the time appointed drew near, 'his lordſhip went to the agreeable ſcene, where 'the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. 'As he was about the dog-boy's ſize, and the 'place was quite dark, ſhe never perceived the 'change put upon her, but laviſhed her careſſes 'upon him with the greateſt tenderneſs, vowing 'never more to have any correſpondence, with 'the pantry-boy, or ſcullion, who it ſeems were 'the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be al-'ways conſtant to him alone; and took her leave 'of him, with a promiſe to meet him there, at 'the ſame time, next evening.

'Diſguſting, as every circumſtance, of this 'affair, ſhould have been, the oddity of it, with 'the pleaſure of ſupplanting another, even ſo 'mean a perſon and in ſo unworthy an object, 'made him determine to be punctual to her ap-'pointment. But then the difficulty was how to 'prevent his rival's traverſing his deſign, for his 'delicacy was not in the leaſt alarmed at the 'thought of his participating her favours. He 'was alſo at a loſs, to know who the obliging 'female might be, for the darkneſs that con-'cealed him was equally favourable to her, and 'he was a ſtranger to her voice, nor did he care 'to aſk any queſtions, as that would betray his

'own

'own impoſture, and bring on an explanation 'that he did not deſire, both as his greateſt 'pleaſure was in the cheat, and the diſco-'very might be attended with circumſtances he 'ſhould chuſe to avoid, in caſe the female was 'diſagreeable to him.

'To obviate all theſe inconveniencies, he 'ordered his rival to attend him the moment he 'returned, when he gave him a letter to carry 'that inſtant to a gentleman, who lived about 'twenty miles off, with directions to be back 'early the next day with an anſwer. This he 'ſaid aloud, in the hearing of all his ſervants, 'that if his miſtreſs ſhould happen to hear of her 'lover's being ſent from home, ſhe might alſo 'have reaſon to expect his return time enough 'to keep the appointment; but to prevent this, 'he had deſired the perſon to whom he wrote, to 'keep the meſſenger, as if for an anſwer of the 'letter, two or three days, in which time he 'concluded he himſelf ſhould be tired of his 'amour.'

CHAP. XV.

Continued: His lordſhip's ſcheme to fling his rival unluckily diſapointed. A diſagreeable meeting occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport.

'PLeaſed with the ſagacity of this ſcheme, 'he waited for the next evening, with an 'impatience that he did not often feel on ſuch 'occaſions;

'occaſions; but an unlucky accident diſappoint-
'ed his deſigns. The gentleman to whom he
'wrote the letter happened not to be at home,
'nor was expected for a day or two; where-
'fore, as his lord had ordered him to make
'haſte back, he left the letter, and returned
'without any delay, perhaps not more in obe-
'dience to his orders, than from his impatience
'to retrieve the diſappointment his deſires had
'met, by his abſence, the evening before.

'As ſoon as he alighted, therefore, his firſt
'care was to find out his miſtreſs, to tell her the
'reaſon of his diſappointing her the evening be-
'fore, and to make a new aſſignation for that;
'but what was their mutual ſurprize, when
'they came to compare notes! As he inſiſted
'on his not having attended the appointment,
'ſhe flew into a rage, and accuſed him of hav-
'ing betrayed her baſely to ſome of his com-
'panions; and as ſhe poſitively aſſerted her hav-
'ing met ſome perſon there, he accuſed her,
'with equal warmth, of inconſtancy, and ſa-
'crificing him to ſome of his rivals, on whom
'he vowed the ſevereſt vengeance, if he ſhould
'ever find him out.

'As this altercation was not carried on with
'much delicacy on either ſide, it ſoon produced
'an abſolute rupture between the lovers, who
'ſeparated with ſentiments for each other very
'different from thoſe with which they met.
'The dog-boy, in an hour or two, when his
'reſentment cooled a little, recollected that it
'might be proper to let his lord know the ſuc-
'ceſs of his meſſage, who ſent for him into his
'preſence directly; and being freed from his
'apprehenſions, by hearing that he was but that

'moment

'moment returned, ordered him to ſet out again 'inſtantly, and deliver the letter to the gentle-'man, where-ever he was, and not return 'without an anſwer.

'His orders were ſo urgent, that the fellow 'did not dare to make the leaſt delay; but for-'tune, that ſeemed reſolved to croſs his lord-'ſhip's deſigns, contrived it ſo, that he met the 'gentleman on his road, without having called 'at home, or received the letter that had been 'left for him. Upon the dog-boy's informing 'him of it, he concluded, as he was much near-'er to his lordſhip's than to his own houſe, that 'it was the readieſt way for him to wait upon 'him directly, without minding to ſend the 'man for the letter. Accordingly he bade him 'turn back, and ride on before him, to ac-'quaint his lordſhip of his coming.

'Though it was late when he had ſet out, the 'ſecond time, he had made ſuch haſte, that he 'reached home juſt at the time of his lordſhip's 'appointment; when it unluckily coming into 'his head, that his perfidious miſtreſs might poſ-'ſibly have taken the advantage of his abſence, 'to make another aſſignation in his dog-kennel, 'the firſt thing he did, the moment he diſ-'mounted from his horſe was to go there, to 'ſee if any one had invaded his territories.

'Nor was his ſuſpicion diſappointed; for the 'fair one was ſo uneaſy to unravel the myſtery 'of the adventure of the evening before, that ſhe 'punctually attended her appointment, where 'ſhe had not waited many minutes, before her 'unknown lover arrived. The ſcene of their 'meeting was ſo dark, that it was impoſſible for 'either of them to know the other. However,

'ſhe

'ſhe ſoon thought of a method to remedy this, 'which was to purloin ſomething out of his 'pockets, by which ſhe might diſcover who he 'was, without betraying herſelf; for ſhe ſoon 'found, that he knew no more of her, than ſhe 'did of him.

'She had juſt executed her deſign, and was 'taking her leave of her lover, when his jea-'lous rival came upon them unawares, and over-'hearing their expreſſions of fondneſs, was ſo 'enraged, that he reſolved to take immediate 'revenge: accordingly he approached them 'without any noiſe, and turning up the but-end of 'his whip, aimed a ſtroke, ſo unluckily, tho' 'at a venture, that it fell'd his lordſhip to the 'ground. The female, who inſtantly gueſſed 'what was the matter, took advantage of the 'darkneſs to make her eſcape, which ſhe hap-'pily effected without any diſaſter, the dog-boy 'ſtumbling over his fallen adverſary, the firſt 'ſtep he advanced to purſue her.

'His lordſhip, half recovered from the blow, 'laid hold of his antagoniſt, who grappling 'with him directly, a battle enſued, in which 'nobility was ſo rudely handled, that his lord-'ſhip was obliged to declare himſelf, and cry 'out for quarter. It is eaſy to conceive the con-'fuſion of the conqueror, upon this diſcovery; he 'inſtantly ſtrove to diſengage himſelf, and make 'his eſcape; but his lordſhip held him faſt, 'promiſing to forgive him, though, if he would 'have the diſcretion never to mention a ſyllable 'of the affair, and inform him who the female 'was, with whom he had made the aſſignation 'to meet in this place the evening before.

'Theſe

'These conditions were too eaſy not to be 'immediately complied with. He accordingly 'ſwore eternal ſecrecy, and readily told his 'lordſhip, that the girl was no other than the 'kitchen-maid's daughter, who ſerved as a ſcul-'lion wench under her mother.

'This diſcovery of his miſtreſs's quality was 'almoſt as diſagreeable to his lordſhip, as the 'effects of the dog-boy's jealouſy. However, 'he ſmothered his vexation, and ſtealing ſecretly 'into the houſe, that he might not be ſeen in 'ſuch a condition, retired to his own apartment 'by himſelf, to change his cloaths, and waſh 'off the blood and dirt, with which he was all 'over plentifully dawbed.

'As ſoon as he had ſet himſelf ſomewhat to 'rights, he rung for his valet de chambre, who 'was his uſual agent upon ſuch occaſions, and 'ordered him to bring the kitchen-maid's daugh-'ter up to him. The valet, who was ſuffi-'ciently acquainted with the capriciouſneſs of 'his maſter's taſte, was not in the leaſt ſurprized 'at his choice of ſuch an object, but obey'd him 'directly.

'The fortunate female, who had found out 'the quality of her new lover by his ſnuff box, 'which ſhe had picked out of his pocket, was 'almoſt afraid to obey the glad ſummons, for 'fear ſhe might be ſuſpected of having deſignedly 'occaſioned the outrage his lordſhip had lately 'met: however, her ambition getting the better 'of her fear, ſhe ſuffered herſelf to be prevailed 'on, and went trembling, and bluſhing, in all 'the baſhfulneſs of virgin innocence, to know 'his lordſhip's commands.

'If he had been ſurprized at the diſcovery of 'her condition, he was much more agreeably ſo 'at the ſight of her: for though ſhe was far from 'being handſome, there was ſomething in her 'face, which with her extreme youth, and a 'glow of health, that her confuſion heightened 'not a little, ſtruck his fancy in an uncommon 'manner. He, therefore, without giving her 'the leaſt hint of what had happened, as he ima-'gined ſhe knew nothing of him, made no ce-'remony of propoſing love to her. But young 'as ſhe was, ſhe had too much woman in her 'ſoul to comply ſo eaſily, though there was no-'thing ſhe deſired more ardently. Accordingly 'ſhe refuſed his lordſhip with the moſt reſpect-'ful modeſty, and on his urging his requeſt 'farther, threw herſelf at his feet, in a flood of 'tears, and begged him to have compaſſion upon 'her friendleſs youth and innocence.

'Such behaviour would have made him doubt 'the dog-boy's information, did not the ſound 'of her voice convince him ſhe was the perſon. 'He, therefore, laughed at her artifice, and told 'her, that as ſoon as the farce was ended, he 'ſhould expect another anſwer, as he knew ſhe 'had granted to others the favour he aſked of 'her.

'This convinced her that he had diſcovered 'her, and that it was neceſſary for her to en-'large her ſcheme, to accompliſh the deſign ſhe 'had formed, of eſtabliſhing a laſting intereſt 'in his affections. Accordingly, upon his ſay-'ing this, ſhe embraced his knees, in a ſeeming 'agony of diſtreſs, and conjuring him to have 'mercy on her folly, owned that ſhe had tranſ-'greſſed with one, and one only, who had made

'ſuch

'ſuch an impreſſion upon her heart, that though 'ſhe had taken him for another, and knew not 'even who he was, ſhe had made a vow, never 'to repeat her folly with any other.

'The candour of this confeſſion, the greateſt 'part of which he thought he knew to be true, 'completed her conqueſt over him. He raiſed 'her from the ground, and embracing her ten-'derly, diſcovered himſelf to her. The conſe-'quence is obvious. She immediately appeared 'in public as his miſtreſs, and had the addreſs to 'accommodate herſelf ſo entirely to his caprices, 'that ſhe ſoon gained the abſolute maſtery of his 'heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turn-'ed off, of courſe, as an offence to her ſight, 'though not without a conſiderable gratuity to 'purchaſe his ſilence; but that was impoſſible; 'the moment he left the houſe, he looked upon 'himſelf as freed from the neceſſity of conceal-'ing it any longer, and made it the common 'ſubject of his diſcourſe, till it became as pub-'lickly known as his lordſhip's name.

'This happened juſt as his affairs became 'again ſo diſtreſſed, that he was forced to 'with-hold the ſupport he had allowed his wife. 'She, therefore, directly took the advantage of 'it to ſue him for a ſeparate maintenance, on 'the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. 'The fact was too flagrant to be denied, 'and his infatuation was ſuch, that he would 'not remove the cauſe, to avoid the conſe-'quence of the ſuit, but choſe to quit his na-'tive country, and come here with his miſ-'treſs, to live in the diſeſteem and contempt 'you ſee him treated with, on the poor pittance 'of his fortune, which the law allows him for

'his ſupport; the reſt, much the greater part of 'it, being aſſigned for the maintenance of his 'wife, and payment of his debts.'

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's maſter meets an old acquaintance, who relates the hiſtory of his life. Curious anecdotes of a GREAT *man.*

MY maſter's friend proceeded to give him an account of ſeveral other perſons who were preſent; but as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I ſhall omit them, as I ſaid before. On theſe I have dwelt ſo long, becauſe they diſplay a juſt, however diſagreeable picture of human nature.

The day after my maſter's being with his friend at court, he went to ſee an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the ſoul are ſometimes ſo ſtrong, as to baffle hypocriſy, and mark the character of the man, in the lineaments of his viſage, to every common eye. The firſt view of my maſter's old friend and acquaintance ſtruck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human ſoul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the leaſt tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no ſtranger to the latitude of my maſter's principles, the intimacy of ſuch a perſon blackened my worſt opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and embracing with the tenderneſs of long parted friends, aſked each other a thouſand queſtions, almoſt in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and

the

the adventures they had met with, ſince they had ſeen each other laſt.

In the account given by my maſter, there were none but common occurrences; but the hiſtory of his friend had ſomething ſo ſtrikingly ſingular in it, that, for the curioſity of ſuch a character, I'll give you a ſhort ſketch of it, as drawn by himſelf, with this difference only, that I ſhall omit ſeveral facts, too groſs for repetition, and ſoften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringneſs of it would overpower human ſight, and ſtrike imagination with horror too ſtrong to bear.

'You have often expreſſed a curioſity, my 'friend,' (ſaid the ſtranger to my maſter) 'to 'learn the particulars of my life. That I did 'not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence 'or diſinclination to oblige you; but becauſe I 'had not arrived at any fixed period to make a 'proper pauſe at, and therefore an imperfect 'account could give you but little ſatisfaction. 'But that objection is now removed: I am here 'ſettled in a ſituation, which, though far be'low my former hopes, I ſhall ſtrive to be con'tented in, and not launch out any more into 'the fatigues and perils of the world, at this 'late ſeaſon of my life. One caution only I 'muſt hint to you, which is, that in the ac'count I am going to give, I ſhall throw aſide 'all prejudice, and repreſent every thing in the 'unadorned ſimplicity of its firſt principles, with'out any regard to the received notions of ſelf'deluded man.------

'I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who 'were ſcarcely able to give me the firſt rudi'ments of a liberal education. To avoid a life 'of labour, I raſhly entered into the monaſtic,

'before I had experience enough to ſee the folly 'of ſuch a ſtep: but my ſtay here was not long: 'to a man of ſenſe, the obligation of a vow 'ceaſes, with the motive that induced him to 'take it. I made my eſcape from the convent; 'and as I was deſtitute of money to ſupport me, 'and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the 'world, to be able to live without it, was driven 'by neceſſity to enliſt myſelf for a ſoldier. But 'I ſoon found, that I had not gained by the 'change, the ſlavery of a ſoldier's life being ſtill 'more intolerable than that of a monk: I there-'fore had recourſe to my former expedient for 'relief, and deſerted the very firſt opportunity. 'I then threw myſelf at random upon the world, 'without any particular point to direct my 'courſe to; but this did not diſcourage me: I 'had boldly thrown off the ſhackles which fool-'iſh man has forged for himſelf, to prevent his 'riſing in life, and regulated my conduct ſolely 'by my convenience. This gave me a ſuperio-'rity over the reſt of mankind, which I never 'failed to avail myſelf of. I looked upon their 'follies as my inheritance, and ſoon found abun-'dant opportunities of turning them to my ad-'vantage.

'For ſome years I lived a life of ramble, in 'the courſe of which I met with many adven-'tures.------- At length, I thought my own coun-'try too narrow a ſphere to confine my activity 'to, and ſo I went to *Spain*, where I expected 'an ample harveſt, from the ignorance and ſu-'perſtition of the people; but their poverty diſ-'appointed my hopes, and almoſt ſtarved me into 'repentance of my expedition. However, I pro-'ceeded to *Madrid*, where the credulity of a

'country-

'countryman of my own made me amends for 'the reſerve of the natives. He not only reliev-'ed my immediate wants, which were too preſ-'ſing to be borne, but alſo entruſted into my 'hands ſome valuable materials for a literary 'work, from which he expected both reputation 'and profit. But I diſappointed his hopes; for 'being tired of *Spain*, I took the firſt opportu-'nity of going to try my fortune in ſome other 'country, and carried all his papers with me. 'Nor was this all he ſuffered by his confidence. 'I had before experienced the inconvenience of 'depending upon charity, in a country where 'there is ſcarce ſufficient for the neceſſities of 'nature. I therefore thought it proper to take 'all the money and valuable effects in his poſ-'ſeſſion to defray the expences of my journey. 'As to the diſtreſs this might throw him into, 'I never regarded that a moment, no more 'than I did his being my countryman. I 'deſpiſed the narrowneſs of thought, that made 'ſuch accidental circumſtances of any weight, 'when they claſhed with my own particular de-'ſigns; and I eſteemed the leſſon I had taught 'him, to be more cautious whom he placed his 'confidence in, a ſufficient recompence for his 'loſs.-----

'From *Spain* I directed my courſe to *Ger-'many*, where the political knowledge I acquired 'from my late friend's papers made me ſo much 'taken notice of, that after ſome time not diſ-'agreeably ſpent among the great, I was recom-'mended to the prime miniſter and favourite of 'the king of *Poland*, as a proper perſon to be 'intruſted with the education of his only ſon. 'Not to diſgrace this character, I aſſumed a

'fictitious name and title, and gave out that I 'had been obliged to leave my own country for 'an affair of honour. My employment gave 'me frequent opportunities of converſing with 'the father of my pupil, to whom I diſplayed 'my ſkill in politicks, to ſuch advantage, that 'I ſoon was admitted into his eſteem and confi-'dence. In this intercourſe, I had the honour 'of ſtarting the firſt hint of that project, which 'has ſince kindled the preſent war in *Germany*, 'and will immortalize his name (for he has 'had the ungenerous meanneſs to aſſume it to 'himſelf) to all ages.

'Such a ſituation was ſufficient to ſatisfy the 'deſires of any other man; but my ambition 'knew no bounds: I thought my patron did not 'reward my merit as it deſerved; and in revenge 'I reſolved to work his ruin. For this purpoſe, 'I entered into a correſpondence with ſeveral 'noblemen, who were his enemies, and taking 'advantage of the opportunities his confidence 'gave me, of ſeeing his papers, copied ſome, 'and counterfeited others, that I thought ne-'ceſſary to my deſign, which was no leſs than 'to raiſe a civil war, in which the miniſter 'ſhould be ſacrificed, and his maſter dethroned. 'But juſt as my plot was ripe for execution, it 'was diſcovered, and I hurried from a palace to 'a priſon, where I was condemned to languiſh 'out the reſt of my days; my life being ſpared 'in compliance with a fooliſh delicacy of my 'patron's, who thought it would be a diſgrace 'to him to have his ſon's tutor hanged.

'When I had lain here ſome time, an happy 'thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a 'moſt penitential letter to the Pope's nuncio, in

'which

'which I diſcovered my true name, and my 'having fled from my vows; and pretending a 'thorough ſenſe of my guilt, and deſire of re-'turning to my order, begg'd his interceſſion in 'my favour. My ſcheme ſucceeded! He 'claimed me as an eccleſiaſtic, and the king, 'whoſe mind was too intent on greater matters 'to think of me, readily complied. I was ac-'cordingly releaſed from my priſon; but inſtead 'of being ſet abſolutely at liberty, as I had hoped, 'was ſent under a guard of eccleſiaſticks to '*Rome*, where all the favour I could obtain, 'was to be ordered back to my convent.

'This was a great diſappointment to me; 'but I was obliged to ſubmit. I accordingly 'ſet out, guarded as before, but determined to 'take the firſt opportunity of making my eſcape; 'which I at length effected, after many vain at-'tempts.

'To fruſtrate the purſuit of my guards, I 'fled into *Switzerland*, where the name of li-'berty flattered my hopes of doing whatever I 'pleaſed. The firſt thing I did there was 'to abjure my religion, and profeſs theirs, to 'conciliate their good opinion. This was no 'difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon 'all religions with equal indifference. As I had 'no money, I immediately commenced author. 'But though I gained reputation, my profits 'were ſo inconſiderable, that I was obliged to 'have recourſe to other methods for my ſupport, 'ſome of which happening to contradict their 'prejudices, I was obliged to leave their domi-'nions with circumſtances of diſgrace. You 'will laugh at the narrow notions of mankind 'when I tell you, that the affair they made ſo

'great a noiſe about, was only my denying a 'debt which I was unable to pay, and the cre-'ditor did not even want.

'There were ſome other particulars indeed of 'my conduct which would have met with a ſe-'vere fate, had I not taken prudent care to ob-'viate it. I had entered into an intimacy with 'a perſon of ſome fortune, who had an agree-'able wife. The connections of the wife are 'always made with a view to ſome particular 'end. I had more than one in this acquaint-'ance; the ſupply of my neceſſities, by the ge-'neroſity of the huſband, and the gratification 'of my pleaſure, by the enjoyment of the wife. '----- I ſucceeded in both; but was prevented 'by an accident from enjoying my ſucceſs long. 'The huſband ſurprized us one day, in a ſitua-'tion that did not admit of doubt. He drew 'his ſword, to have revenged his wrongs with 'my death; but I diſappointed his deſign, by 'preſenting a piſtol at his head, which I always 'carried about me, for fear of accidents. Upon 'this, he ran out of the houſe, in a kind of 'frenzy. I ſaw the delicacy of my ſituation, 'and that my ſafety depended upon the proper 'uſe of that moment. The wife had ſwooned 'away at the firſt ſight of her huſband. I ran 'and fetched a glaſs of water, as if to recover 'her, but conveyed a few drops into it, which 'I never went without, for any ſuch emergen-'cy, that delivered her for ever from all fear 'of her huſband's reſentment. I had many rea-'ſons for doing this. It was in her power to 'make diſcoveries to her huſband, which I did 'not chuſe; beſide, as the ſuſpicion of her death 'would inevitably fall upon him, I thought that

'a good

'a good way to eſcape his revenge. I then 'quitted the houſe, without being perceived. 'All things happened, as I could wiſh. The 'huſband was obliged to fly from his country, 'to avoid an ignominious death, for the murder 'of his wife; and all his effects were confiſcat-'ed to the ſtate. It is true, I did not entirely 'eſcape ſuſpicion! He had laid open all he knew 'of the affair, by letter, to his friends; but 'though they believed him, he had no evidence 'to ſupport his charge, ſo that I deſpiſed his 'impotent accuſations.

'From *Switzerland* I once more turned my 'face to *Germany*, where my name was ſo fa-'mous, for my political knowledge, that a war 'being juſt ready to break out, I received con-'ſiderable offers, from moſt of the parties con-'cerned, to engage me in their ſervice; but 'though I refuſed none, I reſolved not to en-'gage myſelf abſolutely, to any, till I could 'know, which might prove moſt advantageous 'to me.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his ſervices are rejected by the ſtate; and he is obliged to exert his abilities, in a lower ſphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then ſtrives to pay the debt, with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad ſtand.*

'AS *England* was likely to bear a conſider-
'able part, in the war, I thought it pro-
'per, to go over, and ſound the inclinations of
'the miniſtry there alſo. The riches and credu-
'lity of the inhabitants of that country have long
'made it be eſteemed the inheritance of needy
'adventurers. The thought of diſplaying my
'abilities, in ſo fertile a ſoil, inſpired me, with
'an ardour I had never felt before. I already
'graſped all the wealth of the nation, and look-
'ed upon myſelf as the oracle of the people, and
'the terror of the miniſtry, who would not
'fail to purchaſe my ſilence, with a penſion,
'that ſhould enable me to ſpend the reſt of my
'days, wherever I liked, with dignity and
'eaſe.

'Full of theſe flattering hopes, I arrived in
'*London*, where I ſoon found that juſt as the
'notion, I had formed of the people in general,
'might be, the government would not take the
'bait I had prepared for them, and treated me
'and my propoſals with equal contempt. This

'threw

'threw me into the neceſſity of proſtituting the 'abilities, which I fondly hoped would have 'been employed in embroiling nations, to the de- 'ception of individuals, for the ſupport of life; 'for all the wealth I was maſter of, conſiſted 'ſolely in the projects of my brain.

'My ſucceſs in this under-plot made me 'ſome amends, for the miſcarriage of the other. 'I no ſooner fixed my habitation than I was 'crouded to, by tradeſmen of all kinds, to ſol- 'licit my cuſtom, for things, which I had not 'the leaſt probability of being ever able to pay 'for. But that gave me no concern; I accepted 'their offers, to ſuch an amount, that I was 'immediately able to procure conſiderable ſums 'of money, for other occaſions, by the ſale of 'commodities, which ſo far from having occa- 'ſion for, I ſcarcely knew the uſe of.

'Fluſhed with this good fortune, I threw off 'all reſerve, and gave a looſe to every paſſion, 'which luxury could raiſe, in a temper naturally 'warm; never reflecting, that the day would 'ſoon come, when my inability to pay my pre- 'ſent debts would not only put a ſtop to theſe 'artificial reſources, but alſo probably plunge 'me in the horrors of a gaol, for life. I pro- 'feſſed myſelf a man of pleaſure! I dreſſed, 'gamed, and intrigued, with people of the firſt 'rank; and for ſome time was ſo intoxicated, 'as to forget my firſt purpoſe in coming over, 'and think I could ſupport this life, for ever. 'Not that I was ever ſo intent upon my plea- 'ſures, as to miſs any opportunity, of procur- 'ing the means, immediately neceſſary to ob- 'tain them. On the contrary, the moment I 'threw off my deſigns, upon the government,

'I doubled

'I doubled my application, to turn the follies 'of particulars to my own advantage, ſtop- 'ping at nothing, however iniquitous, in the 'opinion of the world, to accompliſh my de- 'ſigns.

'Such a life muſt neceſſarily involve me in a 'variety of adventures, many of which, 'tis 'true, I got not ſo ſmoothly over, as I could 'wiſh; but I had learned philoſophy enough 'to take the bad, with the good, without re- 'pining, at what it was not in my power to 'redreſs.

'It would be endleſs to enter into a particular 'detail of every thing I did, and ſuffered in the 'courſe of this life; I ſhall, therefore, only 'juſt mention one or two affairs, which may 'ſerve to give you ſome notion of the reſt.

'As I particularly valued myſelf, upon my 'literary character, there was no kind of ac- 'quaintance, I was fonder of cultivating, than 'with men of letters; for which I had alſo a 'farther motive, that as their attention to books, 'generally made them ſtrangers to the ways of 'men, they were moſt eaſily to be made the 'property of any mercenary deſigns.

'On both theſe accounts, I had taken lodg- 'ings, in the houſe of a clergyman, who beſide 'the character of a man of learning, was alſo 'reputed to be in eaſy circumſtances. I ſoon 'found that he was a perſon exactly fitted for 'my deſigns, and therefore loſt no time, in mak- 'ing a proper impreſſion on him. The firſt 'ſtep towards acquiring confidence, is to place it 'yourſelf. I immediately made him my banker, 'lodging every ſum of money I won at play, or 'raiſed by the means I mentioned before, in his

'hands.

'hands. As my ſucceſs made theſe ſums very 'conſiderable at firſt, he conceived an opinion 'of my being a perſon of conſequence, and 'fortune, above my appearance. This inſpired 'him with ſuch reſpect for me, that if at any 'time, I even hinted an occaſion, for more than 'I had in his hands, he not only offered to ſup-'ply me, but even looked upon my acceptance, 'as an honour. To confirm him, in this way 'of thinking, I frepuently accepted of his of-'fers, when I had no occaſion, only that the 'punctuality of my payment might make him 'ſtill the readier, whenever I ſhould.

'Nor was it long before I was obliged to 'avail myſelf of this ſcheme. A bad run at play 'ſtripped me of all my money, and my tradeſmen 'brought in their bills, ſo that my former re-'ſources were at an end. In this difficulty, I 'applied to my landlord, who readily ſupplied 'me with all the money in his poſſeſſion; and 'that not being ſufficient, borrowed as much 'more, as he could, till my remittances ſhould 'arrive from my eſtate.

'This ſupply might have extricated me from 'the difficulties of the preſent moment. But I 'was awoke from my golden dreams, and ſaw 'that this was the laſt money I could any ways 'expect to raiſe, as my practices began to be 'ſuſpected, and every body had taken the alarm 'againſt me; ſo that if I parted with it, I ſhould 'only gain a momentary relief, as my landlord 'would ſoon expect to be paid alſo. I, there-'fore, reſolved to ſerve all my creditors alike, 'and go back to *Germany*, with the money in 'my poſſeſſion, leaving them, to curſe their credulity,

'credulity, and be more cautious for the fu-
'ture.

'As I had ſtill a conſiderable quantity of valu-
'able effects, in my poſſeſſion, I knew it would
'be impoſſible to remove them, without giving
'the alarm to my landlord, and I could not
'think, of leaving them in his hands, though
'they were far ſhort of the debt I owed him.
'In this dilemma, my ready genius prompted a
'ſcheme, that would not only ſecure me from
'him, but alſo gain me time to prepare for my
'decampment, with more convenience. Upon
'my firſt coming to his houſe, I had contrived,
'by taking the impreſſions in wax, to get falſe
'keys to all his locks. This is a piece of pre-
'caution, which no man of prudence will ever
'neglect. In purſuance of my ſcheme, the
'morning after I had received the money from
'him, and before I was to pay it away, by ap-
'pointment, I took the opportunity, while he
'was at church, to convey into his cloſet, ſe-
'veral things of value, my property in which I
'could clearly prove, taking away at the ſame
'time, the obligations which I had given him
'for the money he had lent me, which his con-
'fidence in my honour had prevented his taking
'the precaution of having witneſſes to.

'As ſoon as I had done this, I went directly
'to a magiſtrate, before whom I made oath of
'my being robbed of a large ſum of money and
'many of my moſt valuable effects, among
'which I particularly named the things I had left
'in his cloſet, and required an authority to ap-
'prehend my landlord, and ſearch his houſe, as
'I had reaſon to ſuſpect, that he had ſtolen them,
'having caught him ſeveral times coming out

'of

'of my apartments, in evident confuſion, and at 'times, when my being abſent deprived him of 'every honeſt reaſon of going into them: and 'this charge, I had confirmed by the teſtimony 'of my valet de chambre, and another perſon, 'whom I had prepared properly.

'Though the execution of ſentence is not 'quite ſo ſudden, in *England* as in *Turkey*, an 'accuſation of this kind, however groundleſs, 'is in many reſpects, not much leſs dreadful; 'the harpies of the law, never looſing their 'hold, till they have devoured every thing in his 'poſſeſſion. The warrant I demanded was readi-'ly granted, for this reaſon; and away I re-'ſolutely went, in company with the officers 'to execute it. We found my landlord, in the 'ſecurity of innocence, in his parlour, waiting 'for my coming in to dinner. It is impoſſible 'to expreſs his aſtoniſhment, when they laid 'hold of him, like a thief, and told him it was 'on my accuſation. All the reſolution, and 'preſence of mind I was maſter of, were requi-'ſite to bear me through the ſcene! At firſt he 'was unable to ſpeak a word; which the can-'dour of his accuſers did not fail to conſtrue, as 'a ſilent acknowledgement of his guilt; but re-'covering himſelf, in a few moments, he firſt 'raiſed his eyes to heaven, and then turning 'them upon me gave me a look, that almoſt 'froze the blood in my veins; but never 'deigned to ſpeak a word to me.

'He then addreſſed himſelf to the officers, and 'mildly deſired that they would execute their 'duty with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the 'ſacred character he bore, till a proof of his

'guilt

'guilt ſhould make him appear unworthy of the 'ſanction of it.

'Such behaviour had an effect not to be de-'ſcribed, upon all that were preſent. The very 'officers forgot their hardened nature for a mo-'ment; and the tear of pity fell from eyes, that 'never wept before at human miſery. Even I 'began to feel the fooliſh infection, and was 'obliged to charm up other paſſions to prevent 'my betraying myſelf, though my ruin was at 'ſtake. Accordingly, I raiſed my voice, and 'with a ſtern accent, commanded the officers 'to do their duty, and ſearch the houſe, before 'his accomplices ſhould have time to convey 'away the things we came in queſt of. This 'word put an end to a compaſſion, that was 'contrary to their nature, and the proceeded 'to their buſineſs, with their uſual keenneſs; 'though ſtill with reſpect; till they came to 'to ſearch his cloſet, where the ſight of things, 'which I had ſworn to have been ſtolen from 'me, appeared ſo plain a proof of his guilt, that 'they treated him with all the indignity of the 'vileſt malefactor.

'Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto 'preſerved a ſteadineſs of temper, that ſeemed 'ſuperior to the power of fortune; but at this 'ſight, his reſolution failed him. He fell upon 'his knees, and raiſing his hands and eyes, to 'heaven; "Juſt God (ſaid he) thy will be done! "Thou knoweſt my innocence, and art able to "defend me!-----And wilt defend me"-----(ſaid 'he) riſing and recovering his former ſpirits.

'In the mean time, I ſeemed encouraged by 'this ſucceſs, to hope for the recovery of the 'money, which I pretended to have loſt alſo,

'and

'and ceaſed not to urge the officers, to make the 'ſtricteſt ſearch. But this was not neceſſary; 'they ranſacked every place, and toſſed about 'every thing, that was too large for them to 'convey away, till they made his whole houſe 'one ſcene of deſolation. They then dragged 'him before the magiſtrate, where the finding 'of the things gave ſuch weight to the charge, 'which I poſitively ſwore againſt him, that he 'was on the verge of being hurried to priſon, and 'would certainly have ſuffered an ignominious 'death, had it not been for ſome unlucky pre-'varication, in my valet de chambre's evidence. 'This, with ſome ſuſpicions, that were ſuggeſt-'ed againſt my own character, by the pawn-'broker, to whom I had ſold the goods I took 'up from my tradeſmen, and who unfortunately 'happened to be preſent, gave the affair ſuch a 'turn in his favour, that he was admitted to bail, 'till his innocence, or guilt, ſhould be proved 'by a public trial.

'But it was far from my intention to wait 'for this. The moment I left the magiſtrate, I 'went to the houſe of an acquaintance, whither 'I had ordered my effects to be removed before, 'where I reſolved to prepare for my departure, 'with the utmoſt expedition. As to my credi-'tors, when they called upon me next morn-'ing, as I had appointed, for their money, I told 'them the ſtory of my having been robbed the 'day before, by my landlord; and therefore, 'that they muſt wait till I ſhould receive ano-'ther remittance, from my own country; and 'though I ſaw, that few of them believed me, or 'were inclined to grant me that indulgence; I 'was under no concern, as the habitation of my

'friend

'friend was in a place, privileged from the im-
'mediate power of the law.

'However, it was impoſſible to be eaſy, in
'ſuch a ſituation, where every eye, that ſaw me,
'reproached me, with what I had done! I,
'therefore, took the firſt opportunity of going
'off, in which I was ſo ſucceſsful, as to elude
'the vigilance of my purſuers, and eſcape to
'*Holland*; where I had the vexation to learn that
'half of my ſcheme was diſappointed, my land-
'lord being diſcharged without trial, for want
'of my appearing to proſecute him; but though
'he eſcaped death, his affairs were ſo effectually
'ruined by the loſs of the money he lent, and
'had procured for me; and the expence, and da-
'mage he ſuffered by my accuſation, that he
'was obliged to fly, for refuge, to the ſavages of
'*America*, from the power of his more ſavage
'creditors.

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politicks, and ſuffers a ſecond ſhip-wreck, in ENGLAND. He that will not, when he may, *&c.* ----- *It is often better to play a poor game, than ſtand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives in* LISBON.

'IN NO ſooner arrived in *Holland*, the general
'rendezvous of politicians, than I reaſſumed
'that character, once more, and that with ſuch
'ſucceſs, that the miniſter, of a power in al-
'liance

'liance with *England*, conceived ſuch an opini-
'on of my abilities, as made him offer to recom-
'mend me to that court, for an employment of
'the higheſt conſequence, in one of the principal
'courts of *Germany*.

'Though I was ſenſible, that my return to
'*England* muſt be attended with diſagreeable, if
'not dangerous circumſtances, from the general
'prejudices, that were entertained there againſt
'me, I boldly reſolved to accept of his offer:
'the former, which could conſiſt only in impo-
'tent marks of diſlike, I diſregarded; and the
'latter, I judged my recommendation would en-
'able me to defeat. Accordingly I ſet out, with
'the utmoſt privacy, and was ſafe in *London*, be-
'fore my leaving *Holland* was even ſuſpected by
'thoſe, who would have lain in wait for me.

'The very morning, after my arrival, I wait-
'ed upon the miniſter, to whom I was recom-
'mended, with my letters, who received me very
'politely, and upon the credit of the character
'given to him of me, entered into a familiar
'converſation, on ſeveral ſubjects of intricacy,
'and importance, in which I ſupported the cha-
'racter he had received of me, ſo well, that he
'diſmiſſed me, with an aſſurance of his protec-
'tion and favour.

'I now thought myſelf ſecure of my hopes;
'but the pleaſure of this thought was of a very
'ſhort continuance. The very next morning, I
'received a meſſage from the miniſter to attend
'him directly, which you may think I obeyed in
'the higheſt ſpirits. Inſtead of the affability,
'with which I expected to be received; upon
'my advancing to him, he darted a look at me,

'that

'that ſeemed deſigned to ſearch my very ſoul. 'After viewing me ſteadily thus, for ſome mo-'ments, "You are recommended to me (ſaid 'he) as a man of abilities; and ſuch I have 'found you to be; but you have impoſed upon 'the perſon, who recommended you, and con-'cealed your real character from him, or he 'would never have entertained ſo favourable an 'opinion, of ſuch an abandoned wretch!--- But 'I have unravelled the myſtery of your iniqui-'ties, and am guarded againſt your wiles.---Your 'crimes call loud for vengeance, and the ſtroke 'of fate hangs over your head: but in hopes 'you may repent, and amend your life, and in 'reſpect to the recommendation you brought '(of which I cannot give a ſtronger teſtimony 'than this) I will give you an opportunity to eſ-'cape, for this time, the ruin that threatens 'you. Fly this country directly! If you are 'found in this city, an hour hence, or make the 'leaſt delay, in any part of the kingdom, (and 'all your ſteps are watched) you are to expect no 'favour or protection. And that you ſhould not 'plead inability to obey this injunction, take this 'purſe of gold, and let me never ſee your face 'more."

'I need not tell you the effect this ſpeech had 'upon me! I took the purſe, and retired with-'out making any reply; nor did I cloſe my eyes, 'in ſleep, till I had bid adieu to that inhoſpita-'ble ſhore.

'On my return, I went to wait upon my for-'mer patron, but was denied admiſſion, and or-'dered never to go there any more: the account 'of my diſgrace in *England* having, as I learned

'after-

'afterwards, been tranſmitted to him, in the very ſhip that brought me over.

'Though theſe miſcarriages mortified my 'pride, they did not deject my ſpirit. The gold, 'given me by the Engliſh miniſter, enabled me to 'ſupport myſelf, in a ſtate of independance, for 'ſome time; during which I ſucceſſively offered 'to accept every propoſal, that I had formerly re-'jected; but I had miſſed my opportunity, and 'was now rejected myſelf, in my turn. At 'length, when I was almoſt reduced to deſpair, 'the employment I hold here, was offered to 'me, which, though far beneath my former 'hopes, I thought it not prudent to refuſe; eſpe-'cially as it opened to me an opportunity of vent-'ing my rage, with impunity, upon all who had 'ever offended me. I am literally hired to wage 'open war with truth, honour, and juſtice, by 'inventing falſe news, to ſupport the exhauſted 'ſpirits of the people; --- by defaming the ene-'mies of my employers, to give a colour to the 'iniquitous deſigns of the latter; and by varniſh-'ing over the moſt flagrant acts of oppreſſion, 'cruelty, and deceit with the ſpecious colours of 'authority, juſtice, and religion.

'To a man, who retained any of the prejudices 'of the world, and did not examine things in 'the ſimplicity of nature, ſuch a taſk muſt be 'moſt diſagreeable. But to me, all things are 'indifferent, as I know all things are alike.'

Here my maſter's friend concluded his hiſtory; the enormity of which would prevent it's obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himſelf, though, as I have told you before, I have omitted the blackeſt particulars, and ſoftened the colours of the reſt.

In

In a few days after this interview my maſter left *Bruſſels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Liſbon*, during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *comes, at* LISBON, *into the poſſeſſion of a former acquaintance. His maſter makes the great attempt, without ſucceſs. Several of the nobility are ſacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is at length taken up; and he changes his ſervice.*

IF I was formerly ſurprized at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no leſs ſo, when I found that the perſon to whom he ſent me in *Liſbon* was the very captain, of whoſe miraculous converſion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account, in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man choſen for *the great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raiſed their opinion of him ſo high, as to make them think him the only proper perſon for this.

I did not remain long in a ſtate of ſpeculation in the poſſeſſion of this maſter; the orders which were brought along with *me*, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of *the* deſign. Accordingly the blow was ſtruck a few nights after, but in the confuſion, inſeparable from ſuch attempts, without effect.

The

The king was ſhot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love-aſſignation, at ſome diſtance from his palace, by my maſter, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuſs, loaded with ſmall balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an inſtantaneous ſtupefaction of fear, which is often taken for reſolution, and preſence of mind, the king fell down in the coach, and ſpoke not a word, which made my maſter conclude the work done, and ſo prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confuſion the next morning, when he found that the king, though ſeverely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was loſt, nor was it probable, that another ſhould offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event, ſo far ſafe that no one could endanger his ſafety by betraying him, there being no perſon there, not even of the order, privy to the action: for ſecrets of this importance are always entruſted to as few as poſſible.

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned ſpectator, it is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction that reigned all over the city, where every perſon ſuſpected his neighbour, and was almoſt afraid to converſe with his brother, for fear of being ſuſpected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the perſon guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the moſt myſterious ſilence was obſerved, and all converſation on the ſubject diſcouraged. This was thought to be the moſt probable way of coming to the knowledge of ſo dark an affair; as their ſpies could thereby mix with the people with leſs ſuſpicion, and make their obſervations with the

greater certainty, when they ſhould be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loſs to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was ſtruck was the difficulty to find out, that ſo they might found their proceedings on an evidence of juſtice, for the Jeſuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reaſon for ſuſpecting them of this fact was, that upon the miſcarrage of their premature attempt in *America*, the king was ſo incenſed againſt the whole ſociety, that he diſmiſſed them from the direction of his conſcience, and every other place and employment about his perſon and court.

Such an indignity he was ſenſible muſt alarm the reſentment of a ſet of men not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts, he had therefore taken every precaution to guard againſt them as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only againſt diſturbances in the ſtate, for of ſuch an attempt as this he could not ſuſpect them.

While things hung in this ſuſpence, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to deſcribe them.

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add, poverty, pride, ſuperſtition, bigotry, and its inſeparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you ſome idea of the preſent *Portugueſe*. A people of whom it is hard to ſay, whether to abſtracted ſpeculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, they ſtruggle between their follies and vices is ſo unremitted and ſo ſtrong.

A lit-

A little before I arrived there the city had been reduced to aſhes by lightening, and before they had recovered from the conſternation which ſuch a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being ſwallowed by an earthquake.

Such ſignal inſtances of the wrath of heaven might have been expected to alarm their conſciences to look for the cauſes of it, in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But inſtead of that, the firſt proof they gave of coming to their reaſon (or I ſhould rather ſay of coming to themſelves, for reaſon it was not) after their fright, was to attribute theſe misfortunes to a relaxation in ſuperſtitious ſeverity, and to demand as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whoſe good-nature had given effectual relief to their diſtreſs.

At length, after a calm ſo long, that people began to think the ſtorm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burſt, but alſo the whole nation beſide.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love-meeting. The perſon with whom he had been was deſcended from the firſt, and related or allied to all the greateſt families in his kingdom.

In a country, whoſe characterſticks are pride and revenge, ſuch an intercourſe muſt be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all thoſe families ſeemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly a rumour of her being with child having extorted ſome inadvertent, illative, general menaces from ſome of her relations, as the fact was really ſo, the conſcious apprehenſions of the

king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reaſon of them, he made a pretence of the aſſaſſination; the charge of which received ſome appearance of probability, from the very circumſtance which now occaſioned its being brought againſt them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger ariſing from a real crime, were the greateſt ſubjects in the kingdom to be ſacrificed, on a pretence of guilt, which their very accuſers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was reſolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of ſeizing all their vaſt poſſeſſions, and thereby repairing the loſſes he had ſuffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after ſuffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confeſs a guilt of which they were not even ſuſpected; they were publickly executed in the moſt ignominious and cruel manner, in the ſight of an aſtoniſhed people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beſide the bare affirmations and ſtrained inferences of thoſe who were both accuſers and judges, and alſo reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such ſcenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I ſhall therefore return to my maſter, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every tranſaction relative to this myſterious affair, the miſcarriage of his attempt having made it unneceſſary for him to diſburſe the money, among which I came to him, and

by

by that means continued me ſo long in his poſſeſſion.

Could any thing have heightened the opinion, my firſt knowledge of him gave me, it muſt have been to ſee him, an unconcerned ſpectator of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the juſtice of their puniſhment.

But his triumph was not long; ſecret and inſcrutable as the Jeſuits imagined they had laid their ſchemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, ſuch information of them as confirmed, by a multitude of facts, not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and juſtice to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmoſt ſeverity. A ſtep, that could not have been taken on ſuch grounds, while theſe nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in ſpirits to exert the influence of their prejudices in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to ſtrike at the root of eccleſiaſtical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke, under which they had ſo long blindly groaned, that at length, they thought it juſt and natural.

Accordingly, in the midſt of his ſecurity, my maſter was ſeized, and hurried away to a priſon, with the reſt of his brethren; and all his papers and effects ſecured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little uſe, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them, whoſe diſcovery may endanger them, or their deſigns; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this diſſipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who in his ſearch, took an opportunity

to ſecrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquiſition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL *meets another accquaintance at his new maſter's. Concluſion of the hiſtory of honeſt* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his ſon. He enters into buſineſs at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *ſuffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle juſtly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

I WAS ſcarce ſettled in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I ſaw a perſon enter his compting-houſe, the ſight of whom made me almoſt diſtruſt my ſenſes. Nor was the ſurprize of my maſter leſs: 'O, God of Abraham (ſaid he) 'is not that the ſon of my brother *Aminadab?* 'Where haſt thou been? And where is thy fa-'ther? He has been ſought from *Dan to Beer-'ſheba!* His ſpoiling thåt gentile, that *Egyptian* 'woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! 'but I am amazed to ſee thee here; I hope 'he is ſafe out of the reach of every Chriſtian 'power.'

'O, brother of my father, (replied the ſon of '*Aminadab*) mention not that unhappy affair, 'if thou haſt not a mind to kill thy wretched 'nephew with grief. My father is dead?'---- 'But where is the wealth, nephew,' (interrupted 'my

my maſter haſtily) 'where is the wealth?'---- 'All loſt! all buried with him in the bottom of 'the ocean, (replied the nephew.) ----'*All loſt! 'The wealth all loſt! O my brother! O Aminadab 'my brother! my brother! Since the deſtruction of 'Jeruſalem there fell not ſuch a misfortune on our 'tribe! The wealth all loſt! O Aminadab my 'brother! my brother!*'----'Alas, my father, I 'faint through wearineſs, weakneſs, and hunger; I have not eaten bread this day; let us 'retire into the inner chamber, and when my 'ſoul is refreſhed with a morſel of bread, and a 'drop of water, I will put aſhes on my head, 'and ungird my loins, and then unfold the whole 'unhappy ſtory to thee.'

The repaſt was literally what he had aſked; and as ſoon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle ſeated on the floor together, in the poſture of mourning, the former proceeded thus.

'By the letters which my father wrote to thee 'from *England*, in the ſacred cypher of our family, thou wer't informed of his intended re'turn into his native land of *Africa*, and invited 'to meet him at *Tetuan*, and ſhare in his for'tune. This he told me while we were upon 'our voyage; but thy better angel prevented 'thee, and ſaved thee the labour and loſs of ſuch 'a journey in vain.

'The ſhip on board which we unfortunately 'embarked was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coaſt 'of *Italy*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from 'whence we knew we could get an immediate 'paſſage over. But behold, when we were juſt 'in view of the port; when the ſight of his 'native land made the ſoul of my father rejoice,

'and we thought of nothing but ſafety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave chace to our ſhip. 'The *Dutch* captain immediately crouded all the 'ſail he could to eſcape; but the wind dying 'away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his 'oars, he came to my father with tears in his 'eyes, and told him that we were all ruined, for 'he had neglected to bring a paſs.

'This news was like a clap of thunder to my 'father, who too well knew the conſequence of 'their finding ſuch a maſs of wealth in his poſ-'ſeſſion!' '*Wretch that I am,* (exclaimed he) '*why did I venture with one of thy ſordid nation? 'ſlaves to* MAMMON, *who would hazard liberty 'and fortune to ſave ſuch a trifle.*' 'Then turning about and going into his cabbin, he ſtood 'ſome moments, as if loſt in thought, when 'burſting into an extatick rage, he ſnatched up 'the coffer, in which his gold and jewels were, 'from under the head of his bed, and embracing 'it eagerly,' '*I have gained thee,* (ſaid he) *I have 'earned thee with anxiety and toil; and I will not 'loſe thee now!---- O Jonas ſend thy whale to re-'ceive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers. 'I will not be a laughing-ſtock to the Gentiles, nor 'a bye-word in my father's houſe.*'---- 'Saying 'which words he ruſhed upon the deck, and be-'fore any perſon could poſſibly prevent him, he 'plunged into the ſea, with the coffer in his 'arms, and was never ſeen more.

'While all ſtood amazed at his raſhneſs, the 'heavens, as if appeaſed with the ſacrifice, im-'mediately ſent a wind, that filled our fluttering 'ſails, and ſoon bore the ſhip, delivered thus of 'its *Jonas*, out of the reach of the enemies. 'You may better conceive than I can deſcribe,

'the

'the ſituation I was in at this event: I proſtrated 'myſelf on the ſhore when we landed at *Gibral-* 'tar, and bewailed my misfortune with tears 'and lamentations. But this afforded no relief 'to my diſtreſs; and ſomething I muſt do, to 'earn a morſel of bread. I therefore ſold all my 'ſuperfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our 'money was in the coffer, and with theſe did I 'purchaſe ſome eggs and fruits, which I ſold 'again in the garriſon, to ſupport my life, till I 'ſhould have an opportunity of coming to thee, 'my father, for advice and aſſiſtance in this diſ- 'treſs; and now behold theſe four ducats are 'become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is 'all my worldly wealth.'

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained ſilent ſome time. At length he ſpoke to his nephew, in theſe words: 'It is in 'vain, O ſon of my brother, to mourn for what 'is not to be remedied; holy *David* wept no 'longer for his child after he was dead: let us 'therefore ariſe and think of ſomething that 'may, if not retrieve thy mighty loſs, at leaſt 'adminiſter relief to thy diſtreſs. Thou haſt 'been initiated in the myſterious art of leſſening 'the weight, without effacing the image, on the 'golden coins of theſe idolaters. This was the 'firſt riſe of thy father, who began the world as 'poor as thou art now; till his unwearied in- 'duſtry in this practice raiſed him from want. 'Follow thou therefore his example; and may 'the God of thy fathers give thee the ſame ſuc- 'ceſs, but with an happier bleſſing than he 'found.

'And lo! fortunately it has happened, that 'I have this very hour received a large quantity

'of the coin of *Britain*, all new from the mint. 'On that therefore thou may'ſt begin thine endeavours, and the fourth part of the produce of 'this labour ſhall be thine: I was juſt going to 'have ſent for another, who always works for 'me, for a fifth; but I am willing to give thee 'a profit extraordinary to encourage thee.

'Thine earnings in this buſineſs will ſoon 'produce thee a conſiderable ſum, with which 'thou may'ſt go privately to *London*, and purchaſe old cloaths, which will bring great profit 'in *Germany*, as ſoon as this war ſhall be at an 'end.

'Till thou art able to provide for thyſelf thou 'may'ſt eat bread here, and ſleep under the ſhadow of my roof: be not dejected; *honeſt* induſtry never fails of ſucceſs.'

The young *Aminadab* was no ſooner introduced thus into a way of *honeſt* induſtry, than he ſeemed to forget his loſs, and ſettled himſelf moſt intently to work. I fell one of the firſt ſacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; ſo that from a thouſand of us, who were in the bag, his ſhare of the ſpoil was a treaſure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, ſtocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of impoſition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleaſure; but, alas, vain boaſt! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial with all the marks of age, and infirmity ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myſelf and my companions to a number of

of *Britiſh* ſoldiers, juſt come from *Soup Maigre* and ſtraw, in a *French* priſon.---In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel, to be ſent to *England*, againſt whom this trade was moſtly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the diſgrace of ſuch diminiſhing. But before I could be ſent off, an accident happened in the family of my maſter, the banker, which gave me a longer delay in *Liſbon*.

I have told you that in ſecret he was a Jew, though the proſpect of gain made him profeſs Chriſtianity, in deſpight of the horrors of the inquiſition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made ſuch profeſſion, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no ſooner had his gains, in his art of diminiſhing, reſtored him a little to his ſpirits, than thinking his portion of that profit too little, and inſufficient beſide, to raiſe him to opulence ſo ſuddenly as he deſired, he caſt about how to acquire the whole, or at leaſt a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main buſineſs, at ſome diſtance from his uncle's houſe; and having conveyed a large ſum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaiſm*, with directions how to detect him in it, concluding, that when he ſhould be ſeized, there would be no enquiry made after the money that was in his own hands; as he knew it was impoſſible he ſhould ever eſcape from thence. And though this was but a poor pittance, in compariſon of the ſums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted

forted himſelf with the thought that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and juſtly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For when the officers of the inquiſition took poſſeſſion of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in queſt of it, and that ſo unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a poſſibility of evaſion or eſcape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any ſtate. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death not leſs cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquiſition.

Of all the human ſufferings I had yet ſeen, except in the caſe of the *ſacrificers*, this gave me the greateſt pleaſure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my ſervice of courſe, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which I was delivered the day I was taken out of the poſſeſſion of the unfortunate Jew.----I have before given you my ſentiments on the abſurdity of thinking to pleaſe the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the inſtance of the *human paſſover* of the Jews. The ſame arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if poſſible, more abſurd under the Chriſtian diſpenſation than any other, as beſide the general laws of nature and reaſon, the particular laws of Chriſtianity do every where clearly and expreſsly command brotherly love, tenderneſs, and compaſſion, forbidding every appearance

appearance of cruelty, under the ſevereſt denunciations of wrath.

But there has been ſo much, and that ſo well ſaid, on this ſubject already; and the nature of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy wretches who are brought before this tribunal is ſo well known, that I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumſtances of which appeared ſingularly affecting to me.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love ſcene in a ſtrange place. The hiſtory of PHERON *and* ILISSA.

THE next day after I came into the poſſeſſion of the inquiſitor, there appeared at his tribunal a perſon of a moſt auguſt preſence, though overcaſt with all the melancholy which his unhappy ſituation could inſpire. He ſeemed to be advanced in years, but not paſt the vigour of life, and was diſtinguiſhed from the national look of the *Portugueſe*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which ſhewed him of another people.

As ſoon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquiſitor, with an awful ſolemnity in his voice and manner, addreſſed him thus, 'Thou art once more brought to this tri-'bunal, to try if the ſtubbornneſs of thine heart 'has yet relented, and thou wilt confeſs thy 'guilt.'—'I told thee before, O judge of the 'faith

'faith of Chriſtians, (replied the priſoner, with 'a compoſed look and determined voice) I told 'thee before, and I repeat it again, that I am 'not conſcious of any thing that ſhould incur 'the cenſure of this tribunal: nor ſhall all the 'tortures which the inventive cruelty of man 'can inflict upon this wretched body, make me 'lie againſt mine immortal ſoul, or acknow-'ledge guilt to which I am a ſtranger. But tell 'me of what I am accuſed, and my conſcience 'ſhall direct my lips to anſwer thee the truth. 'Perhaps I may unwittingly have erred; thou 'knoweſt that I have not always profeſſed the 'Chriſtian faith, according to the laws eſta-'bliſhed here: pardon then the errors of mine 'ignorance, and inſtruct me to avoid the like 'for the future. And, O I adjure thee by thy 'Chriſtian faith, to relieve my heart from the 'anxiety that tears it, for the fate of my daugh-'ter! O, let me know'------

His aduration was broken off at theſe words by the officers of the court; and his anſwer not being ſatisfactory, he was remanded back to priſon, without any farther queſtions, with the ſtrongeſt menaces of ſeverity; though in ſecret the judge ordered him to be treated with tender-neſs and reſpect, and ſupplied with every com-fort and convenience of life that could mitigate the horrors of a priſon.

My maſter then withdrew, and changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and ſplendid dreſs, retired to his own apartments, where, af-ter the reſpectful ceremony of ſending to deſire admiſſion, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approach-ed with all the timid tenderneſs of love. 'I have

'ſeen

'ſeen thy father, my deareſt *Iliſſa*, (ſaid he) 'and he is well; nor ſhall any human means be 'wanting to preſerve him ſo.'

'Why then may I not ſee him? (replied the 'lady:) how can I truſt thy words, who haſt al-'ready deceived me?'---'Thou knoweſt, my 'love, (returned he) that thy requeſt is impoſ-'ſible; and if I have deceived thee, by pro-'miſing compliance with it, it was only to calm 'the tranſports of thy paſſion, that in a cooler 'moment thou mighteſt hearken to the voice of 'love and happineſs.'---'*Mention not happineſs to 'me in this place! Can happineſs be without li-'berty? Is a priſon the proper ſcene for love? 'But I will be deceived no longer! I will ſee my 'father, or I will not live. Grant me this re-'queſt, and expect my gratitude. Thou knoweſt 'that for myſelf I fear not thy power! thou knoweſt 'that immediate death is ever in my reach; triſle 'not therefore with me any longer; reſtore me to 'my father; reſtore us both to liberty; and then, 'then only, ſpeak to me of love.*'---'Thou haſt 'conquered, my *Iliſſa!* thou haſt conquered! 'Your father ſhall be reſtored to you; and we 'will all fly together to thy native land, where 'we ſhall live in happineſs: but this cannot be 'compaſſed on a ſudden; it will require both 'time and addreſs to ſecure our retreat. But 'when I have done this for my *Iliſſa*, can I be 'ſure of her love? Will her heart return the ſa-'crifice I make?'---'*I have told thee that my 'heart is grateful; I tell thee now it is not in-'ſenſible to ſofter paſſions: urge me no farther; 'when I am freed from this priſon, and my father 'is preſent to give the ſanction of his authority to 'my actions, I promiſe thee to become thy wife.*

'*And*

'*And my inclination, which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not find it difficult to pay the love I promiſe, at the altar.*'

Theſe words raiſed my maſter's heart into an extaſy; he proſtrated himſelf at her feet, he kiſſed her hand, and ſwore eternal love.

The reſt of the day was ſpent in forming ſchemes for their eſcape, and planning ſcenes of future happineſs; in the proſpect of which, their unequal years ſeemed to raiſe no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen: her beauty, though very great, was rather majeſtic than ſoft; different from the *Bohemian* lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful diſtance, and the flaſh of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was juſt paſt his meridian, but ſtill in all the vigour of his life, and far from diſagreeable in his appearance or converſation.

There was ſomething ſo extraordinary in this affair, that it raiſed my ſtrongeſt curioſity to know the circumſtances of it; nor was I long at a loſs. In the happineſs of his heart, that evening my maſter preſented a jewel of immenſe value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he aſked a tablet, caſed with gold, as a return.

The lady refuſed not his requeſt, but at giving it, deſired that he would be careful of it, as ſhe eſteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her ſay this, and ſaw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curioſity would be gratified by the *ſpirit of the golden caſe*. As ſoon, therefore, as my maſter retired to reſt, I entered directly into his heart, and ſummoning,

ſummoning, by our ſympathetick impulſe, the ſpirit I wanted, I *ſhewed* him my curioſity, which he complied with, by *a look* which ſignified theſe words.--- 'There is ſomething ſo extraordinary 'in the whole hiſtory of the perſons who have 'raiſed your curioſity, that it will be neceſſary 'to trace it from the beginning, to give you the 'ſatisfaction you deſire.

'The father of the young lady, who gave me 'to our maſter, is the perſon whom you ſaw 'this morning at his tribunal. His name, in 'his own country, was *Pheron*; he is a native of '*Abiſſinia*, where his anceſtors have poſſeſſed 'ample territories for many ages, being deſcend-'ed from the race of their kings.

'From the firſt dawn of reaſon in the mind 'of *Pheron*, he ſhewed the ſtrongeſt deſire for 'knowledge, and the ſteadieſt attachment to vir-'tue. The advances of human knowledge have 'not been ſo great in thoſe countries as here; 'yet natural reaſon has been able to diſcover the 'ſublime truths of morality; the practice of 'which is called wiſdom, and the time conſum-'ed here in fruitleſs ſpeculation devoted to it; 'by which means, if men are not ſo knowing, 'they are certainly more wiſe.---In this happy 'employment paſſed the firſt years of the youth 'of *Pheron*, till riper manhood calling him to 'the ſervice of his country, he went at the 'head of his father's vaſſals, to repel the inva-'ſions of the *Ethiopians*.

'His ſucceſs was ſo great in this firſt eſſay of 'his arms, that he not only repelled the inva-'ders, but alſo carried the war into their own 'country, where, after many victories, he com-'pelled them to ſue for peace.

'The

'The fame of his actions ſoon reached the 'ear of his ſovereign, who ſent for him to his 'court, and rewarded his ſervices, by giving 'him his ſiſter in marriage. Dignities in thoſe 'countries are not proſtituted to the ſupport of 'luxury and idleneſs. *Pheron* returned home 'with his bride, to govern and protect his peo-'ple, who, ſafe in his care, purſued their uſual 'occupations; war not being made there a con-'ſtant profeſſion, nor the gratification of the worſt 'paſſions of human nature reduced into a ſcience, 'and practiſed by rule.

'The peace which *Pheron* had made was not 'injurious to his enemies, and therefore was 'preſerved by them, which gave him leiſure to 'attend to the improvement of his country, and 'inſtruction of his people.

'He had lived in this happy ſtate ſome years, 'when there arrived a perſon in his country, 'who gave an unexpected turn to his affairs. The 'ſituation of thoſe nations is ſuch, that the in-'habitants themſelves rarely ever travel; nor is 'the face of a ſtranger ſeen in an age among 'them. This made the arrival of this man the 'more taken notice of; he was immediately in-'troduced to *Pheron*, to whoſe friendſhip, his 'knowledge in ſeveral branches of ſcience ſoon 'recommended him.

'When the ſtranger had thus eſtabliſhed an in-'tereſt with him, he at length diſcloſed to him 'the motive of his coming into a country ſo re-'mote from his own; he told him, that he had 'undertaken this hazardous and painful journey 'in pure obedience to the divine command of in-'ſtructing the ignorant in the knowledge of ſal-'vation. He *explained* to him the *myſteries* of

'the

'the Chriſtian religion; the *hierarchy* of *Rome*; 'the *divine* foundation of its power; and the ſe-'veral orders in its government, in ſo forcible a 'manner, that he ſoon made a convert of him. '*Pheron had always adored the name of Chriſt,* '*but never till now knew what it was to be a Chri-*'*ſtian.* One only book of his goſpel had he e-'ver ſeen, and from that he could underſtand no 'more, than that *faith in the death of Chriſt for* '*the redemption of mankind, and obedience to the* '*ſelf-evident laws of morality, with the pious wor-*'*ſhip of the one* GOD *alone, was the whole religion* '*taught by him.*---It is not ſtrange therefore, if 'the glorious fabrick of the church, as repre-'ſented by this Jeſuit, for ſuch he was, had all 'the effect he could deſire upon him, the natu-'rally inquiſitive turn of his mind making him 'liſten with eagerneſs to every thing which 'ſeemed to open a new proſpect to it.--Nor was 'he content with his own knowing thoſe ſublime 'doctrines: he alſo inſtructed his wife, whom 'he tenderly loved, and their example con-'verted the greateſt part of his people; for no-'thing could prevail upon him to attempt forcing 'their aſſent.---But this did not ſatisfy him; the 'deſcriptions which he had heard of the learn-'ing, piety, and glory of *Rome*, had filled his 'ſoul with an ardent deſire to ſee that metropo-'lis of the world, that he might learn its vir-'tues, and tranſplant them into his own coun-'try. He communicated this thought to his in-'ſtructor, who fired with the glory of ſuch a 'proſelyte, encouraged him in it, by every ar-'gument he could uſe.--This determined his re-'ſolution to make an attempt, the hazards of

'which

'which would be rewarded with ſuch happy 'conſequences. He therefore prepared all things 'for his journey, in which his wife would bear 'him company, and alſo bring her only child, 'the lady whom you ſaw to-day, to receive the 'benediction of his *Holineſs*, and committing 'the government of his people to his brother, 'and taking jewels and gold to an immenſe va-'lue to defray the expences of his journey, he 'ſet out with a company ſufficient to protect 'him from the dangers of travelling through ſuch 'inhoſpitable countries, and arrived without any 'accident at the *Red Sea*, where he embarked 'on board a ſhip for *Alexandria*.

'While he waited here for a ſhip bound to '*Italy*, the plague deprived him of his inſtructor 'and his wife. He was at firſt inconſolable for 'his loſs; but virtue ſoon awoke reaſon to his 'guard; and his care for his daughter made him 'careful for himſelf.---His attendants would have 'perſuaded him to return directly home, as he 'had loſt his guide; but the loſs of his wife made 'the thought of home a torture to him. He 'therefore ſent them back, and reſolved to ſet-'tle his daughter in a convent, and enter into the 'monaſtic life himſelf at *Rome*.

'With this deſign he embarked in the firſt ſhip 'that ſailed for *Europe*, not being able to bear the 'ſight of a place which had been ſo fatal to him. 'The ſhip was bound to this place, but for a 'large ſum of money, the commander engaged 'to land him at *Leghorn*; but happening to come 'to the knowledge of his wealth on the paſſage, 'he brought him directly hither, where he was 'no ſooner landed, than he informed the inquiſi-'tor, who is his brother, who immediately ſeiz-

'ed

'ed both *Pheron* and his daughter, *for errors in 'their opinions*, and confined them in the priſons 'of the *holy office*, where they have now been a-'bove a year.

'The firſt motive of this outrage was the 'ſtranger's wealth, an unpardonable crime in 'that court; and which would ſoon have brought 'them to an unhappy death. But the beauty of 'the daughter has hitherto deferred their fate, 'and by what you have overheard to-day, may 'probably prevent it entirely.'

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquiſitor viſits PHERON, *and obtains his conſent. He employs an* ENGLISH *jailor, whom he ſets at liberty, to aſſiſt him in his deſigns.*

THE inquiſitor's heart was too full of love to let him ſleep long; he aroſe about midnight, and taking the keys of the priſon, which were every night depoſited with him, he went directly to viſit the father of *Iliſſa*.

He found him wrapped in ſo profound a ſleep, that his approach did not awake him; a ſight ſo unuſual in thoſe manſions of deſpair aſtoniſhed him; he pauſed a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart ſuperior to ſuch 'terrors.

Juſt then a ſmile of indignation flaſhed over the face of *Pheron*; and in the illuſion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! my con-'ſcience

'ſcience is ſecure, and I deſpiſe your tortures.' ---As he ſaid theſe words, the working of his mind awoke him, when ſeeing my maſter ſtanding at the ſide of his bed, the ſcene ſeemed to him, in his ſurprize, to be continued, and he proceeded thus.---- 'I have told thee, that thy 'tortures ſhould not bend my ſoul to falſhood; 'and now thou ſhalt find it ſo.'

'O father of *Iliſſa*, (returned my maſter, 'melted into tenderneſs at ſuch a ſight) I come 'not to give thee torture! I bring the balm of 'comfort to thy ſoul!--- '*Art not thou the inquiſitor?*' -- 'I am, O *Pheron*, and thy friend.'---- '*Am I awake? is this, or was the former, but a 'dream? Guard me, good heaven! let me not fall 'from virtue!*'---'Such virtue ever is the care of 'heaven! *Pheron*, behold thy friend! the proſelyte of thy virtues.--The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining 'happineſs. Thy *Iliſſa*'--*Heaven guard my child!*' ---'Thy *Iliſſa* is well, and happy in her father's 'welfare!'---'*O my child! my child! but ſhall I ever ſee her again?*'---'You ſhall; ſhe ſhall be 'reſtored to your boſom, and never torn from it 'more.'---'*Good, gracious judge! O, when? O, how? --- My child! my child!*'---'Suppreſs 'your joy a moment; the beauties of *Iliſſa* 'have triumphed over the malice of her fate! 'ſhe has found a lover, who offers happineſs to 'her and you.'---'*Does my child love him? Is he an honeſt man?*'---'His life will prove him 'ſuch! he offers to reſtore you and your *Iliſſa* to 'liberty, and to accompany you both to your 'native country, for there can be no ſafety in

'*Europe*

'*Europe* for you, after you leave this place; your 'eſcape from whence, and every circumſtance 'relating to your return, ſhall be his care. Nor 'will he demand the reward his heart pants for, 'till your ſafety ſhall remove every fear, every 'doubt of his ſincerity.'

'*O name the generous man!*'---'Behold him 'at your feet? receive me for your ſon.'--'*Thee!* '*the inquiſitor! who threatened me with torture!*' --- 'But treated thee with tenderneſs, treated '*Iliſſa* with reſpect.'--- '*Make me know that!*'--- 'I aſk no favour but on that condition; if I pro-'cure liberty for you and your *Iliſſa*; if I reſtore 'you to your native land and accompany you thi-'ther; if your *Iliſſa* acknowledges the ſervices 'of my love, and aſks your conſent to reward 'them, will you confirm my bliſs and own me 'for your ſon?'---'*I will, and thank kind hea-*'*ven that gives me ſuch a ſon.*'

Saying this, he embraced my maſter, who in a few words let him know the ſcheme, he had formed for their eſcape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to proſecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquiſition, there was confined an *Engliſh* ſeaman, who had been ſeized and ſecretly conveyed thither for ſome diſreſpectful expreſſions againſt the *divinity of Saint Dominick.*

The manly, modeſt reſolution, with which he had refuſed to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmneſs under the firſt tortures, marked him out to the inquiſitor, as the perſon proper for his deſign; for he would not truſt any one of his own country, not even his brother,

ther, whoſe treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As ſoon as he opened the door of his cell, the ſailor, whoſe foreneſs prevented his ſleeping very ſound, perceived him, and imagining it was a ſummons to a repetition of the torture, he ſprung up, as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, '*Hollo! who comes there?*' --- The inquiſitor advancing, anſwered, 'A friend.'---*Aye! 'damn all ſuch friends*, (replied the ſailor) *I ſuppoſe you are come to give me another toaſting; but 'if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd ſend you 'off with a ſalt eel for your ſupper.*'

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; 'I come to ſet you free if you deſire, and will 'deſerve it.'---'*Avaſt haling, brother! I do not 'underſtand you!*'---'Why, do not you deſire to 'be free?'---'*Deſire! aye! that I do! but I may 'whiſtle for that wind long enough, before it will 'blow.*'----- 'Perhaps not; perhaps that wind, 'as you ſay, is nearer blowing than you ima'gine! what would you do to be free?'---'*Do? 'I'd burn the inquiſition, and cut the inquiſitor's 'throat! I'd do any thing, but turn papiſt, 'or fight againſt Old England.*'----- 'Honeſt 'Briton! but ſuppoſe I ſhould ſet you free; 'would you ſerve me faithfully in one thing, 'that is neither againſt your country nor your 'religion?'--- '*Belay that, and I'll warrant 'you; if I ſay it, I'll do it without more words. 'I am no landſman nor Portugueſe.*'--- 'Well 'then, I'll take your word, and ſo come with 'me.' -------- The ſailor was ſo ſurprized he ſcarce knew whether he was aſleep or awake; however, as ſoon as the inquiſitor had unlocked his

his chains, he ſhrugged his ſhoulders, and followed him, without more queſtions.

When they were come into my maſter's apartment, he made the ſailor ſit down, and giving him ſome wine to chear his ſpirits, 'You are 'now at liberty, my friend, (ſaid he) without 'any farther condition, and may go where you 'pleaſe: but if you will ſerve me in an affair I 'ſhall mention to you, you ſhall have reaſon to 'think of this night with pleaſure as long as you 'live.'---'Serve you, maſter! (replied the ſailor) 'that I will! name but what you would have 'me do; that is, as I ſaid before; you under-'ſtand me; and I'll do it, though it was to 'hand the main top-gallant ſail, in a ſtorm, at 'midnight, when the yard was broke in the 'ſlings, and it was not my watch; for if it 'was a man's watch, do you ſee, it would be but 'his duty; and there is no merit in a man's do-'ing his duty; I am no flincher; I never ſay Aye 'when I mean No: though I ſay it I am a gentle-'man; my father was lieutenant of a man of 'war, and I have been at ſea theſe five and 'thirty years man and boy, and never was once 'brought to the gang-way in all that time. If 'the noble captain that rated me a midſhip-'man twenty years ago, had lived to be an ad-'miral, I ſhould have been an officer before now.'

The honeſt openneſs of heart that appeared in the ſailor's giving his own character made my maſter hear him with pleaſure, and place an entire confidence in him. As ſoon as he had finiſhed, therefore, he opened his ſcheme to him, and the ſailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ſhip, and freight her for *Alexandria*, and to call at *Liſbon* in his way, and take my maſter

and his friends aboard, to do which he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to diſpoſe of in *London*, and account with the inquiſitor for the ſurplus, after the purchaſe of the ſhip and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as ſoon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus ſettled, the ſailor was juſt departing, when on a ſudden thought, he turned ſhort on the inquiſitor; 'Steady, (ſaid he) 'ſteady; ſo far we go right before the wind, 'and all's well. But whom do you mean to 'clap aboard me when I come? if it is the *Pre-* 'tender, or the *French* king, here, take back 'your *trinkams*; I'll be damned before I'll help 'either of them to make his eſcape.'---'Never 'fear, my friend, (replied the inquiſitor, ſcarce 'able to contain his laughter, at the ſtrangeneſs 'of ſuch a thought) I promiſe you it is neither 'of theſe; I promiſe you not to do any thing 'againſt your king or your religion.'---'But 'ſhall we not have one daſh at this damned 'place? (added the ſailor) ſhall we not ſet it on 'fire, and cut the inquiſitor's throat? I'll bring 'a gang of jolly boys that would ſhoot the 'gulph of hell, to have a ſtroke at *Devil Do-* 'minick; ſhall we not ſet the inquiſition on fire, 'and cut the inquiſitor's throat.'---'We will 'conſider about thoſe things: but you had bet- 'ter loſe no time; and let me once more cau- 'tion you, not to be ſeen in *Liſbon* at preſent; 'and to be as expeditious as poſſible in your re- 'turn.'----'Never fear, maſter; never fear,' replied the ſailor, and ſhaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.

I here

I here quitted the ſervice of the inquiſitor, being among the money which he gave to the ſailor.

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.*

MY new maſter no ſooner found himſelf at liberty, than he haſted away to the ſea ſide, without ever ſtopping to look behind him, and luckily finding the packet juſt ready to ſail, he was out of ſight of *Liſbon* before morning.

Never was an heart ſo intent upon executing a commiſſion faithfully as his; he thought of nothing elſe all the paſſage, and the moment he arrived in *London* he ſold the jewels, bought a ſhip, manned her well, and having laid in a proper cargo, ſet ſail for *Liſbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle ſpectator of theſe tranſactions, for young *Aminadab* had made ſuch depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my maſter's honour would not think of parting with me for leſs, without acquainting the perſon from whom he had received me.--- The moment he arrived

in *Liſbon* he gave notice to his friend, whoſe joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expreſſed. He immediately had the treaſures, which he deſigned to take with him, conveyed ſecretly aboard, and as ſoon as the wind ſerved, embarked himſelf with his friends, in the night, and obliged my maſter to ſail directly, though greatly to his diſſatisfaction, becauſe he would not conſent to his firing the priſon of the inquiſition, and *cutting the inquiſitor's throat.*

Heaven ſeemed to approve of the undertaking, ſending a fair wind, which ſoon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impoſſible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt feſtivity of my maſter add a little to the pleaſure of their voyage, which met but one cloud, that ſeemed at firſt to threaten a good deal, but ſoon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my maſter entered the cabbin haſtily one morning, and with a kind of fierce delight flaſhing in his eyes, ſays to the inquiſitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, *owner*, you ſhall now ſee 'what *Engliſh* boys can do: there is a large '*Frenchman* bearing down upon us, but if you 'do not ſee him ſhear off as ſhort as if he had 'got foul of a lee ſhore, I will never take the 'helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop 'anchor to bring him up along ſide of us; and 'as I expected ſome ſuch thing; I took a letter 'of marque, ſo that you need not fear being 'hanged for a pirate, if the worſt ſhould happen.'

But delighted as my maſter was, his paſſengers did not ſeem ſo well pleaſed with the news, eſpecially

eſpecially his *owner*, who was not uſed to fighting, and beſide was too anxious for his eſcape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleaſure, which could poſſibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and ſeeing the ſhip really coming toward them, the inquiſitor went into the cabbin, that he ſhould not be obſerved by the men, and ſending for my maſter, accoſted him thus; 'Surely, 'my friend, you cannot mean to wait for that 'ſhip, (for we were *lying-to*) ſhe certainly 'means to attack you.' ---- 'And ſo let her, '*owner*, (replied my maſter) I'll warrant ſhe gets 'as good as ſhe brings.' ---- 'But conſider, my 'friend; (returned the inquiſitor) conſider we 'are on board you.' ---- '*Well, owner, and what 'then; you are not afraid: the lady may be ſtowed 'ſafe below; and you'll ſtand as good a chance as 'another; you are not afraid.*' ---- 'My good 'friend, I have not time now to explain my rea-'ſons to you; but if you have any regard for 'me, you will inſtantly croud all the ſail you 'can, and get clear of this affair; I deſire it; 'I beg it.' ---- '*Why look you, owner, what needs 'all theſe words? if ſo be, you order us, we muſt 'put about to be ſure, for the ſhip is your's; but 'then the honour of old England, conſider that; 'the honour of old England.*' --- O, my friend, I 'can conſider nothing but my deſire to avoid 'this danger; ſo once more I beg' --- '*Enough 'ſaid, enough ſaid.*' Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our *owner* does not chuſe this 'bruſh, while the lady is on board; ſo we muſt 'about ſhip: but as we come back, *Soup Mai-'gre* ſhall pay for it.' --- And ſaying this, he obeyed the deſire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the ſame ap-

pearance of pleaſure, not being able to avoid ejaculating *damn fear*, at every turn of the tune he whiſtled as he walked the deck the reſt of that day.

He had ſo punctually obſerved his *owner*'s inſtructions, in getting a good ſhip, that we were ſoon out of ſight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with any thing diſagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all recovered their good humour, my maſter addreſſed his *owner* thus---'Now, *owner*, while the 'ſky is clear, and we have nothing elſe to do, 'I had better give you an account of your mo-'ney. Here is the log-book, which you may 'over-hawl at your leiſure, though the ſooner 'the better. This is the time; there is no tak-'ing a good obſervation in a ſtorm, as may hap-'pen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a new 'cable: but I muſt give you one point to direct 'your reckoning by; and that is this; you bade 'me buy a ſhip, and freight her, and ſo forth, 'and ſhe and the cargo ſhould be my own, after 'I have done your job this trip. Now, *owner*, 'it is very true that a leſs veſſel than this might 'have made the run; but then you ſeemed ſo 'deſirous to be ſafe, that I thought it beſt to take 'a bargain in this ſtout ſhip, which I knew to 'be as good a ſea boat as ever turned to wind-'ward, and able to go, hank for hank, with 'any thing that ſwims the ſea, as we ſhewed 'when we run the *Frenchman* out of ſight yeſter-'day; though it went againſt my heart to do 'it; but no matter for that now; the ſhip is 'your's, and you have a right to be obeyed. 'However, there is the account, and here is the

'reſt

'reſt of your money, of which I did not lay out 'one ſhilling that I could avoid, but one guinea, 'which I gave to my old meſs-mate *Will Croſſ-* 'tree, whom I met on *Tower-hill* in diſtreſs; 'and one I gave *Black Moll* of *Wapping* to *heave* 'down; and I could not well avoid thoſe either, 'for *Will* was an old meſs-mate, and I owed '*Moll* for many a good turn in her way; but 'all this ſignifies nothing to you; they can be 'ſtopped in account; and here is a damned 'guinea too, that would not go; I believe it 'has been in the hoſpital, till it was *fluxed* off 'its legs.

'And now, *owner*, as you may think this 'ſhip coſt too much, and that the cargo is too 'good; I will not keep you to your bargain; 'ſhe is your own and all that is in her, only 'pay the men; as for me I am ſatisfied with 'having got out of that damned inquiſition, and 'leave the reſt to yourſelf. If you think that I 'have deſerved any thing, well and good; if 'not, I do not fear bread, while the ſea flows 'round *Old England:* all that grieves me is, that 'you would not let us ſet fire to the inquiſition, 'and cut the inquiſitor's throat.'--- If my maſ-ter's bluntneſs in the affair of the *French* ſhip, gave offence to his *owner*, the honeſty of this ſpeech reſtored him to his warmeſt eſteem; and made *Pheron*, who was preſent, cry out in a rap-ture, 'Thank heaven there is ſtill ſome honeſty 'among mankind.' ----- 'Honeſty! aye, (re-'plied my maſter) a little among the tars of *Old* '*England!* a little.'

The inquſitor having by this time, recover-ed from the aſtoniſhment, into which ſuch no-bleneſs of ſoul threw him, returned the account unopened,

unopened, with theſe words, 'I am convinced 'your account muſt be juſt; and I freely make 'you a gift, not of this ſhip and cargo, for they 'are juſtly your own already, but of the reſt of 'the money which is in your hands.'----'*What,* '*all, owner! all!*' ----'All, my friend; if it 'were many times ſo much you juſtly merit it.' ---'*But then, owner, had not you better ſign the* '*account if you pleaſe, for fear of after reckonings* '*with your executors; for I hate the law dam-* '*nably, ever ſince I loſt a year's pay for hindering* '*our boatſwain's mate's brother to beat his wife.* '*The brimſtone ſwore I beat her huſband, and ſo* '*I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's fault* '*that ſet her on. Damn all lawyers, ſay I.*'--- 'Well then, my honeſt, worthy friend, there 'is a receipt; and I wiſh you ſucceſs equal to 'your merit; and you cannot have more.'---- '*Enough ſaid, owner; enough ſaid: I thank you;* '*I thank you.*'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued ſcene of happineſs. My maſter landed his paſſengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they ſoon ſet out for *Pheron*'s country, and at his taking leave of them, adviſed them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ſhips of thoſe countries, which he aſſured them were not better than *bumboats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the ſea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having finiſhed this, his firſt buſineſs, he proceeded to diſpoſe of his cargo, for which he met ſo good a market, and made ſo profitable a return from thence home, that as ſoon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Goſport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to ſpeak to till now, readily conſented to marry him.

him. One thing though I muſt not omit, and that was, that he kept a conſtant *look out* all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman*, whom he had fled from ſo ſore againſt his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one bruſh, for the honour of *Old England*.

I did not remain with him to be a witneſs of his happineſs; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine ſleeve-buttons, to preſent to his miſtreſs the morning before his marriage.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL *arrives in London, where he comes into the poſſeſſion of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A moſt unhappy inſtance of human infirmity. The concluſion.*

THE diminution of my ſize, which had made my late maſter careleſs about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent ſcruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my preſent value, for me.

I did not remain long in his poſſeſſion: he paſſed me off as ſoon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a diviſion of the loſs, in the purchaſe of old cloaths, which he was going to carry abroad.-----Strange were the ſcenes, and unexpected the faces, which I ſaw in this place, where every neceſſary utenſil of life, every ornament of luxury, was depoſited, as in a place of

ſe-

ſecurity, by their reſpective owners: but your own experience makes any particular deſcription of this place, or its manifold myſterious trade, unneceſſary to you.

The misfortune of my ſize kept me a priſoner here till Saturday night, when my maſter always *puts off* his light coin, juſt before he ſhuts his ſhop, to the poor people, whoſe neceſſity requiring an immediate ſupply, for the ſupport of life, cannot wait to return it on Monday, and ſo muſt even bear the loſs.---Such a perſon did he think you, and accordingly gave *me* to you; but the moment I came into your poſſeſſion, and found that you were *the choſen of ten thouſand, the firſt born of ſcience*, whom wiſdom had inſtructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your purſuit, had been obliged to conſent to a revelation of her moſt *occult wiſdom*, and to entruſt you with the command *of that chain*, which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I ſay, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greateſt pleaſure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I ſhould confer this completion of human happineſs and honour upon you; a pleaſure that was heightened by the noble conſtancy you ſhewed, when the ſmell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's ſhop, raiſed that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you ſhould purchaſe ſome of it to ſatisfy your hunger, or preſerve me for this laſt experiment, in which the latter was ſo glorioufly triumphant.

The

The auſpicious moment is arrived; *nature labours in the throws of the myſtick birth*; *and lo! the philoſophick king ariſes in all the glory of the morning!* attend to my words; receive the conſummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this ſecret cauſe, you muſt know * * * * * *

* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * *

O doleful and deplorable event; never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears. Juſt as the ſpirit had arrived at this moſt intereſting point, human weakneſs, unable to ſuppreſs the impulſe of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek ſet in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raiſed in my ſtomach, emitted an exploſion that filled the room with a fetid ſteam. The ſpirit ſtarted at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation, and abhorrence, vaniſhed from my ſight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I ſunk under its weight, and ſwooned away upon the floor *, where officious humanity found me, and reſtored me to a life that was a burden under ſuch a diſappointment. The labour of my life being loſt, the *one* moment in a thouſand years ſlipped

* See the preface

ſlipped away in vain. But ſuch is the conſequence of human weakneſs; ſuch the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in diſappointment, who readeſt this moſt lamentable cataſtrophe, whether thou art a taylor, whoſe principal debtor is made a lord, a phyſician, whoſe *noſtrum* is diſcovered, a cobler, who ſleepeſt over thy laſt, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treaſure, a poet, whoſe play is refuſed, or a ſenator, who haſt mortgaged thine eſtate to purchaſe a ſeat in parliament, juſt before its diſſolution, attend to the inſtruction in my words, and learn wiſdom from my example. Seize the preſent moment, nor depend upon the future; let reaſon curb expectation; reduce imagination to common ſenſe; and bring your wiſhes within the bound of your real wants: ſo ſhall induſtry baniſh neceſſity from your habitation, and content turn all your poſſeſſions into gold.

THE END.